

Card Apprentice Daily Log

Chapter 1919 Worship

Date- -/-

Time- -/-

Location- Dark Realm, Diya Valley, Diya Tribe, Old Patriarchal Manor (Cuth Diya's Residence)

In the heart of the Diya tribe's ancient manor stood a grand hall with marble columns and crystal chandeliers. Its walls held forgotten secrets, while its floors bore the weight of generations.

At the center was an altar crafted from rare spirit gold, adorned with priceless titled demon cores reflecting the color of the souls they once held. On the altar was a small ruby gem that pulsed with crimson light at its heart. It appeared to hold the secrets of creation and destruction. It was a pseudo-calamity soul gem.

Kneeling before the altar was Cuth Diya, a humanoid demon with midnight skin and glowing eyes. He patiently awaited his master's arrival in the Dark Realm.

Soon, the crimson glow at the center of the ruby gem grew radiant, enveloping the entire hall in its fiery embrace as the gem transformed into a demon from the Diya tribe.

Wyatt's choice to manifest as a demon from the Diya tribe had a specific purpose: to conceal his true soul signature and records. He guarded against accidental exposure, recognizing the perilous implications. The encounter with the Elder Anesthesia Dragon had illuminated harsh truths: his life-saving abilities, once seemingly formidable, paled in comparison to the might of rulers—those above the ordinary demigods and devils.

Wyatt, standing atop the ornate altar, scrutinized his new form. It was satisfactory, yet he furrowed his brow—he hadn't anticipated such a reception. His searching gaze swept across the opulent hall, finally settling on Cuth Diya. With a measured tone, he spoke, "You've done well, but next time, refrain from such rituals."

Wyatt struggled to adjust to the reverence bestowed upon him by Cuth Diya. He'd already cautioned his calamity daughter gems against such displays, especially among the public. The dark race's culture, however, differed markedly from that of the card apprentices—here, strength was venerated, and worship was reserved for the mighty.

"Master," Cuth Diya began, "forgive my impertinence, but this is merely the bare minimum. I've exercised considerable restraint, heedful of your earlier warning. Please understand, I do this not only for your sake but also for my own." His words were carefully chosen a delicate balance between respect and self-assertion.

Cuth Diya was aware that Wyatt harbored no disdain for the reverence bestowed upon him. Yet, Wyatt's discomfort with being worshipped was palpable. So, risking offense, Cuth Diya continued, "The ritual, Master, is more than a display of loyalty. It is my way, my solemn path, to honor you—my dear master."

"..." Wyatt stared at Cuth Diya, rendered speechless by the unexpected confession. His calamity daughter gems, loyal to the point of fervor, had always revered him. Yet, Cuth Diya was the first to articulate it aloud.

"Fine," Wyatt conceded, but with a caveat. "Do not let it escalate." He acknowledged Cuth Diya's sentiments, permitting this unique expression of devotion. His calamity daughters, unobtrusive in their requests, never demanded much. Now, Cuth Diya merely voiced his feelings, leaving the choice to Wyatt—to allow them the freedom to worship and revere him, privately, among themselves.

Having clarified matters, Wyatt turned his attention to matters regarding Cuth Diya's father, Devil Muth Diya. "What are your father's current intentions?" he inquired. "Is he diligently fulfilling the mission I assigned, or does he harbor ulterior motives?"

Cuth Diya, ever loyal, responded, "Fear not, Master. For now, rebellion is far from his thoughts. His recent failure in subduing the Chaos Dwarf Ezra has severely tarnished his reputation within the faction. Belphegor, once his staunch supporter, now regards him less favorably. His former rivals, seeing his fall from grace, view it as an opportunity to reclaim authority—authority he had once wrested from them.

Without Belphegor to dissuade his adversaries, my father faces challenges both within and beyond the faction. And so, he contemplates an alternative path, the Chaos Dwarf Ezra's enticing offer. Should you provide hope and assurance, he may switch allegiances sooner. Furthermore, he'd be willing to remain, gathering intelligence on your behalf, if you can guarantee his life to a certain."

"I appreciate the update," Wyatt replied. "Should he deliver the information I've requested, and maintain his inclination to switch allegiances during our next encounter, I'll consider granting the assurance he desires."

Wyatt emphasized, "However, remain vigilant. Regardless of his present mindset, he remains a sycophant. Belphegor's favor, or lack thereof, could sway him. We must exercise caution."

"Master," Cuth Diya replied, "I'll bear that in mind." He assured Wyatt that he would proceed with caution, remaining vigilant until the very end.

"Now, I shall take my leave," Wyatt declared, ready to return to the card world. However, Cuth Diya's voice halted him. "Master," he called, "I've arranged a banquet in celebration of your arrival at the Pearl Plaza, complete with entertainment. And, since you've assumed my tribe's form, there's no need to worry about others discovering your true identity or our connection."

"What did I just say?" Wyatt's voice thundered, a tempest of authority. "Did I not caution against escalation?" His words, sharp as obsidian, pierced Cuth Diya—the first calamity daughter gem to receive such reprimand from Wyatt.

Cuth Diya's fervor, his eagerness to express devotion, had unwittingly betrayed him in Wyatt's presence. The master's warning, a stern reminder, echoed in the calamity daughter gem's consciousness.

Having admonished Cuth Diya, Wyatt invoked his devil merchant code privilege. Without waiting for a reply, he slipped back into the card world, leaving behind a lingering tension.

As Wyatt's soul transferred to a pseudo-calamity soul gem within the card world, his Diya demon tribe body dissolved, leaving behind a ruby pseudo-calamity gem that descended to the ground.

Before the gem could make contact with the earth, Cuth Diya seized it, handling it with utmost reverence, and placed it atop the altar. Kneeling before

the sacred stone, he repeatedly struck his head against the floor in deep repentance. The floor, soon stained with his blood, bore witness to his anguished devotion.

After several hours, Cuth Diya wiped the blood from the floor, healing his self-inflicted wounds before departing from the hall.

Chapter 1920 Wyatt's Hobby

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 05:34

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City, TSR Guild Headquarters, Blood Rock Cave Dungeon

Making use of his devil merchant code privilege Wyatt directly transferred his soul to his body in the Blood Rock Cave Dungeon which had fallen asleep due to the Elder Anesthesia Dragon's sleep breath.

Arriving at the Blood Rock Cave Dungeon, Wyatt found that his body was still under the effect of the Elder Anesthesia Dragon's sleep breath. Even Cortney and Bloodette were sleeping on the floor of the cave, still under the effect of the Elder Anesthesia Dragon's sleep breath just like Wyatt's physical body. However, unlike Wyatt whose soul was protected by his calamity soul gem, Cortney and Bloodettes spiritual and physical bodies were out of it.

Considering the realm difference between the Elder Anesthesia Dragon and the three, Wyatt, Cortney, and Bloodette it wasn't uprising that their bodies were still under the effect of its ability.

However, Wyatt saw this as a good thing because thanks to this Wyatt could worry less about whatever hypnotic suggestion Handsome Fox had planted inside Cortney. He was dreading meeting Cortney or even her seeing his asleep body and triggering the hypnotic suggestion implanted inside here. Wyatt was happy to see that out of this mishap, one good thing came out of it.

This was not just true in Cortney's case but also true in Bloodette's case. The potion Wyatt had used to trick Bloodette's body's healing system which was planning to erase everything related to Cortney in Bloodette's body, had already lost its effect and the healing systems were back to normal. However, unlike the last time, they were no longer trying to erase Bloodette's memories

about Cortney as they no longer perceived them to be a trauma for Bloodette. That was because the moment Bloodette fell asleep smelling Elder Anesthesia Dragon's sleep breath, she was very happy that she had found Cortney almost erasing all her guilt and worries about missing Cortney. In a way, unknowingly, the Elder Anesthesia Dragon's sleep breath had actually managed to do some good for the girls.

Wyatt soon willingly destroyed his physical body by reducing them to ashes and reconstructed a new one, one that was not under the effect of the Elder Anesthesia Dragon's sleep breath. Free from sleep, Wyatt walked into his new physical body and changed into a new set of clothes.

Then making use of his celestial force Wyatt lifted Cortney and Bloodette from the floor and placed them on Bloodette's big bed. Then he used his soul pupils to scan their bodies to learn when they would wake up. Only to find that they would be asleep for months at this rate. But not if Wyatt could do something about it.

Wyatt decided to create a potion to help Bloodette and Cortney awaken earlier by making use of the Deviant Devil's blood sample he had collected. The only thing known in the myriad realms that could effectively counter the Elder Anesthesia Dragon's sleep breath. The Deviant Devil's immunity to the Dragon's sleep abilities was going to help Wyatt help the girls awaken from their long slumber.

However, before that Wyatt planned to remove the hypnotic suggestion planted in Cortney. But that was easier said than done. Wyatt used his soul pupils to thoroughly scan Cortney's body and then had the Hive AI come up with the most optimum way to help Cortney rid of the hypnotic suggestion implanted in her.

While Hive AI did that, Wyatt entered the seed world, to find that Dredre and Susan were asleep in a leaf bed atop a tree in each other's embrace. They both looked so serene and cute, their current appearance could put an end to any debate. It was still early morning, and this was the first time he was seeing Dredre sleep. She too was a workaholic like him, tending to her forest day and night. Now that the forest spirit was about to be born she had fewer worries.

Wyatt did not linger long. He entered the isolated space where his clone was substituting for him. Then he walked into another hidden isolated space, even Dredre did not have access to this place. There were two floating islands

inside the hidden space. Each one of the islands had an SSS-rank space sealing array on them. Inside these sealing arrays were the storage cards, each array held one storage card.

These storage cards though just A-rank had SSS-rank sealing arrays locking them. These storage cards were prison, the prison housing Demigod Redfall's soul, and Agent Forger.

Wyatt unveiled a third floating island within the hidden space, positioning it meticulously. Placing the storage card, housing the coveted monster orb card, at its core, he ensured its security. Employing the devil merchant code, he initiated an SSS-rank array, fortifying the storage card's protection. With precision, Wyatt sealed the floating island using an SSS-rank space-sealing array, safeguarding its contents from prying eyes or unwelcome intrusion. The intricate layers of defense ensured the utmost security, leaving no room for error. Wyatt's actions marked a decisive step in safeguarding the powerful artifact, a testament to his strategic prowess and unwavering dedication to the cause.

Indeed, the Elder Anesthesia Dragon remained confined within the monster orb space unless summoned by Wyatt's command. Despite the insignificance of the arrays compared to the Dragon's formidable power, Wyatt insisted on their implementation. It was not a necessity but rather a preference, reflecting Wyatt's penchant for meticulous planning and control. Some might perceive it as a hobby of his, capturing and securing powerful entities within his grasp. This deliberate act showcased Wyatt's strategic mindset and his inclination towards collecting and mastering forces beyond ordinary comprehension. It underscored his commitment to maintaining order and dominance within his domain.

That aside, Wyatt had already completed his oath to the Elder Anestheisa Dragon. Indeed his promise to the Dragon was now complete, he had brought the dragon out of the blood rule source safely and helped regain its innate ability.

Chapter 1921 Fulfilling The Oath

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 05:44

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City, TSR Guild Headquarters, Blood Rock Cave Dungeon

Wyatt took an oath in the presence of the blood-rule source that he would help the Elder Anesthesia Dragon get out of the blood-rule source safely and help it regain its ability.

By bringing the Dragon out of the blood-rule source in his monster orb card, Wyatt had not only managed to help the Dragon get out of the blood-rule source safely but also helped it regain its ability as he had promised in his oath.

Back in the Blood-rule source, the Dragon was lost because of his greed. By this, Wyatt did not mean it by trying to pit the celestial blood-rule slave and deviant devil against each other and became the final victor with their demise. He meant it literally.

This had to do with the deviant devil's blood rule domain which had managed to stripe the Dragon's innate dream escape ability.

The only reason the Dragon was so confident in its innate ability was because many powerful and smartest beings had tried and failed to stop the Dragon's innate dream escape ability. So the Dragon believed that when beings of that caliber were unable to stop the Dragon's escape then the deviant devil and the celestial blood-rule slave too would not be able to stop its escape using its innate dream escape ability.

However, the deviant devil surpassed its imagination, it not only managed to stop it from escaping but also stripped its innate ability from it. Though from the Dragon's perspective, it looked like its confidence and greed became its downfall. When actually it underestimation of the deviant devil's brilliance became its downfall.

The Dragon would agree that it underestimated the deviant devil but it would not know how much it had underestimated the deviant devil because since the very beginning of the battle the Dragon's every move was within the calculation of the deviant devil. When the Dragon foolishly believed that it was playing the deviant devil and the celestial blood-rule source to complete its agenda.

When Wyatt looked back at the battle between the Dragon and the deviant devil, he could not help but wonder if the devil was so powerful why did it not actually subdue the Dragon from the get-go?

Wyatt understood that if the deviant devil came in hot to subdue it the Dragon would instantly escape using its innate dream escape ability, but the Dragon did mention that the deviant devil's muscles had saved the 'awakened form' born from its dream field in its muscle memory.

So if the deviant devil did not want to let the Dragon escape using its innate dream ability shouldn't it immediately transform into its awakened form that was born from the dragon's dream field such that it stood a chance to put up even a bit of struggle if the dragon were to escape?

Instead, the deviant devil never showed the sign of entering its 'awakened form' that was born from the Dragon's dream field. That's because it had other means at its disposal to counter the Dragon's innate dream escape ability.

Wyatt clearly remembers, that as soon as the dark filth covering the Dragon summoned the devil, the first that to come through the other side was not the deviant devil but the devil's blood rule domain. The devil had not even stepped into the blood-rule source but it deployed its blood-rule domain wide enough to cover the Dragon and Wyatt.

Why do that? That was because was the crucial part of the deviant devil's plan to counter the dragon's innate dream escape ability. From the looks of it, the devil's compression of the blood rule was not on par with its strength but on par with the dragon's strength. Meaning, that the proficiency of the devil's blood-rule domain was not something one would expect from an apex ruler class but an uncommon ruler class like the Dragon.

That showed that the deviant devil's comprehension of the blood rule was not strong enough, blood-rule wasn't its main rule. It can be because of many reasons such as lack of aptitude for blood rule but considering the deviant devil was an apex ruler-class being backed by a ruler-class family he could afford a few realms will fragments to make up for his lack of blood-rule affinity. That leaves us with only one assumption, that the deviant devil started practicing the blood rule recently. Explaining why for someone of its strength its conjured blood rule realm was on par with that of the Dragon's.

What must be the reason for the Dragon to not use its main rule and use blood rule to confront the Dragon? Aside from the fact that the Dragon was in the blood-rule source, the only other reason was that the Devil had found a way to counter the Dragon's innate dream escape ability in the blood-rule. Which explains why it only recently dwelled into blood-rule mastery.

As for the Dragon being in the blood-rule source, as far as the Deviant Devil was concerned, it was a lucky coincidence helping it mask the true reason it was using the blood-rule domain when its main rule was something else entirely.

The reason why the Deviant Devil deployed its blood-rule domain through the dark filth portal even before it stepped in the blood-rule source had to do something with the blood-rule meanings used to forge its blood-rule domain. There were mostly miscellaneous and obvious blood-rule meanings that anybody could recognize, but hidden underneath them was the blood-rule meaning that the Deviant Devil had prepared to counter the Dragon's innate dream escape ability.

This blood rule meaning did not immediately stop the dragon from using its innate dream escape ability, it needed time for it to work its magic. This was why the Devil deployed the blood-

rule domain even before its arrival and stalled by talking trash to the Dragon. Like how the Dragon was buying time the devil to was buying time for its plan to work.

- Chapter 1922 Blood Rule: Blood Regression Meaning

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 05:44

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City, TSR Guild Headquarters, Blood Rock Cave Dungeon

The Devil was too strong for the Dragon to defeat and the Dragon was too fast for the Devil to capture. So, when the Elder Anesthesia Dragon and the Deviant Devil finally meet each other after a few millenniums they had their plans to take down each other. Which was why did not immediately start fight rather bid their time for their traps for the other to complete.

While the Dragon was locating the celestial blood-rule slave, the Devil was using its blood-rule domain to slowly strip away the Dragon's innate ability using the blood-rule meaning, Blood Regression.

The blood rule meaning Blood Regression was the blood rule the Deviant Devil had specifically comprehended to counter the Dragon's innate dream escape ability. However, using the blood regression meaning of the blood rule was not simple it came with lots of conditions and drawbacks when used on oneself or others.

The Deviant Devil had to stall time so that all the conditions of the blood regression meaning of the blood rule were met allowing it to strip the Dragon of its innate dream escape ability. This was the reason why it did not immediately start trying its best to capture the Dragon rather talk trash and taunted the Dragon. Trying and saying everything to get the Dragon to stay instead of escaping using its dream escape ability.

Fortunately for the Deviant Devil, the Dragon had a plan of its own to kill and it similarly required it to stall time. Thanks to this the Dragon did not immediately escape feeling its presence but rather stayed behind. Otherwise, regardless of what the Devil tried or how it taunted it, being a selfish coward, the Dragon would have immediately escaped using its innate dream escape ability. Especially now that it knew that the Devil's 76th awakened form could catch it when it used the dream escape ability. It could not stop its escape but it would stick to it like gum. If not for its greed the Dragon would not have dared to stick around and confront the Devil.

This worked in the Devil's favor, the Devil's blood regression meaning of the blood-rule was a few minutes away from stripping the Dragon of its innate dream escape ability but all its plans were foiled when the celestial blood-rule slave's stronger blood-rule domain destroyed its blood-rule domain. Erasing all the progress it had made so far.

Enraged the Devil wanted to rip apart the celestial blood-rule slave's blood domain and teach it a lesson but it learned that its opponent was not ordinary blood-rule, so fearing that the dragon would escape immediately with the intrusion of a stronger third party, the Devil decided to use its tribe's ancestral blessing in combo with its muscles' reality bending ability. During this process, the Devil was surprised that the Dragon showed no sign of escaping rather it appeared as if it was waiting for the celestial blood-rule slave.

This was when the Devil realized what the Dragon was up to. It understood that the Dragon was using itself as bait to get it killed by the celestial blood-rule slave. Understanding this the Devil chuckled in disdain. But it was relieved knowing that the Dragon was not going anywhere.

Blood Regression meaning of the blood rule had the ability to allow its user or the target to physically regress, helping them turn young. It did not send them back in time as it had no relation to time, it only allowed the user to grow physically younger and spiritually younger.

The Devil planned to use this ability of blood regression meaning of the blood rule to counter the Dragon's innate dream escape ability.

How? This was where the genius of the devil's plan lay. It had studied the Dragon's dream escape ability thoroughly and come to understand why it was considered one of the top hundred abilities in the entire myriad realms. This ability appeared to have no loopholes and was pretty straightforward. This was when the devil understood why the Dragon dared to assassinate it with its puny strength.

However, in the amount of sudden epiphany, the Devil noticed that only the most talented Anesthesia Dragons group become Elder Anesthesia Dragons and gain the innate Dream escape ability. So it wondered what if it used the Blood Regression meaning of the blood rule to regress the Elder Anesthesia Dragon into an Anesthesia Dragon? Then wouldn't it lose its innate Dream escape ability?

Yes, the Devil had managed to achieve what others thought was impossible through its obsession with the Elder Anesthesia Dragon. It had managed to find a way to strip the Dream escape ability from the Elder Anesthesia Dragon.

After the Devil entered its awakened form born from the blood-

rule source, the Deviant Devil's affinity and mastery of the blood rule was greater than that of the Celestial blood-rule slave itself.

Gaining such strong affinity and mastery to the blood rule the Deviant Devil's mastery of the Blood Regression meaning of the blood rule had suppressed its previous mastery and comprehension. Now, in its awakened form, the Deviant Devil's blood-rule domain only required a quarter of the time to strip the Dragon of its innate ability it originally required. So pretending to challenge the celestial blood-rule slave as the Dragon wanted it to, the Deviant Devil silently bid its time. Once the Dragon was stripped of its dream escape ability it would subdue the Dragon and leave the Blood rule source before the celestial blood rule slave arrives. Because it knew that fighting the celestial blood-rule slave that was being backed by the blood-rule source in the blood-rule source was stupid.

But the Deviant Devil did not expect the celestial blood-rule slave to use its celestial force to fortify its blood-rule domain and make it strong enough to counter its awakened form's blood-rule domain. By doing this the celestial blood-rule slave had blocked the deviant devil's escape so it had no choice but to fight the celestial blood-rule slave but it only did that when its blood-rule domain had managed to strip the Dragon of its innate dream escape ability. Such that the Dragon would not be able to escape while it was busy fighting the celestial blood rule slave.

Wyatt, thanks to his soul pupils noticed that the Deviant Devil was using Blood Regression meaning of the blood rule to strip the Dragon's innate ability. So he knew as long as the Dragon was out of the influence of the Devil's blood-rule domain, it would retain its ability once again. So by bring the Dragon out of the blood rule source Wyatt had helped it regain its innate dream escape ability.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 05:44

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City, TSR Guild Headquarters, Blood Rock Cave Dungeon, Seed world

Wyatt returned to his clone's side after exiting the hidden space while pondering to create an enhancer, that would hence the Deviant Devil's blood. Such that he could use a tiny part of the Devil's blood sample he had collected to help Bloodette and Cortney awaken from their slumber.

However, there was a problem with that method. The Devil's blood sample still had the Devil's will in it. It was strong enough to resist the will of the blood-rule source. When someone spills blood in the blood-rule source, it instantly gets absorbed by it but in the Devil's case, its strong will resisted the blood-rule source's absorption and remained separated refusing to become a part of the blood-rule source and continuing to be part of the deviant devil even after being separated from it. Making it possible for Wyatt to collect the blood sample of the deviant devil.

Now the very will of the deviant devil inside its blood sample that allowed Wyatt to collect it in the blood-rule source of all places had become Wyatt's problem stopping him from using it. Wyatt was worried that once he removed the blood sample from his storage card, the will in the blood sample would signal the devil his location.

As such Wyatt's idea to use the blood sample of the deviant devil to wake up Bloodette and Cortney came to a halt having met a roadblock. He has the best remedy for the Elder Anesthesia Dragon's sleep breath on him but he cannot use it as it will invite not just his but the entire card world's doom.

Wyatt then began to contemplate another way to help awaken Bloodette and Cortney from their prolonged sleep. It did not take Wyatt to think of a solution. The only thing that Wyatt knew had immunity to the Anesthesia Dragon's sleep breath other than the Deviant Devil was the World Calamity Tree.

The world calamity tree's seed cover protected his spiritual body from the Elder Anesthesia Dragon's sleep breath. In World Calamity Tree's physical body, he was able to roam around right next to a sleeping Elder Anesthesia Dragon and not be affected by its sleep breath. So the answer to Wyatt's problem was himself.

Knowing what he had to do, Wyatt made use of his myriad devil transformation skills to morph into a world calamity tree. Then scraped a bark of his trunk. He was planning to create incense using the bark, which can be burned to create a smell that would counter the sleeping breath of the Elder Anesthesia Dragon, awakening Bloodette and Cortney from their prolonged sleep.

The reason Wyatt decided to create incense instead of a pill or potion was because the bark was his skin in a sense. The thought of Bloodette and Cortney chewing on his skin

did not sit right with Wyatt, it felt weird and cannibalistic. He believed Cortney would agree with him. So he decided to create an incense stick instead. Besides the incense stick made from the bark of the world calamity tree was quite popular before they were whipped out of existence by the Librarian. Many strong dark races liked to get high on it.

After collecting the bark, as Wyatt was about to morph back into his human form, he saw something astonishing. He saw Dredre break through the isolation and fly into the isolated space in her sleep. It was like she was being pulled a string in the air.

In Wyatt's moment of astonishment, Dredre had already flown next to one of his branches. She hugged it and fell asleep on that branch. Wyatt stared at Dredre in bafflement, he did not understand how she was able to smell him with the space isolation separating them.

Wyatt and Dredre, both were in a single space but a part of it was isolated by a partition at Wyatt's will for his use. Wyatt wondered how Dredre smelled him in isolation but then a thought occurred to him that, even with isolation, Dredre could feel the entire space within the seed world which meant the isolated space and the hidden space Wyatt had created in the seed world were not so isolated and hidden.

Realizing this, Wyatt instantly freaked, but understanding that Dredre would not be in a place she was not supposed to be he felt a little relief. It was not like Dredre lied to him, he never asked her. So she did not have reason to tell him unless it came up. But it never came up, so Dredre neither lied nor tried to hide it from him.

Amidst this, there was another greater sense of relief to Wyatt, that he did not feel hungry, or any kind of craving when he saw defenseless Dredre in his current form. He might have used the World Calamity tree seed to forge his ego gem but he was still a human. The stupid Elder Anesthesia Dragon was wrong again. Wyatt was human through and through.

Seeing Dredre break through the space isolation, and fly to a world calamity tree on her own accord Wyatt felt that the pixie race did not even make the world calamity trees work for their food. They just walked to them and handed themselves to the tree on a silver platter. These pixies were really— what's the word— let us just go with naive. This made Wyatt wonder why the Pixies were the ones to be alive while the World calamity trees were extinct.

'Should I awaken her or continue to work in my current form?' Wyatt wondered, looking at the peaceful and serene face of the asleep Dredre. He thought she was the cutest being in the entire myriad realms and could not bring himself to awaken someone so cute.

So Wyatt not only ended up deciding to work with Dredre asleep on one of his branches, but he removed a few more barks from his trunk to create a few more incense sticks. These extra incense sticks were for Dredre. Since she liked the world

calamity tree's fragrance so much Wyatt believed she would love calamity incense sticks created from its bark. It would make a good present for her when her forest's spirit was finally born.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 05:57

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City, TSR Guild Headquarters, Blood Rock Cave Dungeon, seed world

Buying all the required ingredients to create the calamity incense stick from the devil merchant code, Wyatt began to set up an A-rank array formation that would help him create the calamity incense stick. Since he was planning to gift these incense sticks to Dredre, Wyatt decided to create them as alchemy items like in the dark realm instead of cards.

After setting up the array formation, Wyatt fed it the ingredients for the calamity incense stick, creating a batch consisting of 101 calamity incense sticks. Keeping one aside to awaken Cortney and Bloodette, Wyatt had the other hundred incense stick gift warped. Planning to present it to Dredre on the day her forest's spirit was born.

By the time Wyatt was done creating the incense stick, the Hive AI had already found the perfect path to remove the hypnotic suggestion implanted within Cortney. Now he needed to head back to the blood rock cave to remove the hypnotic suggestion inside Cortney and then awaken her and Bloodette by lighting the calamity incense stick. However, with Dredre on his branch, Wyatt did not dare to exit the seed world and enter the blood rock cave. He remembers how freaked out Dredre was the first time she was in the blood rock cave not to mention that Dredre was needed here to take care of her forest and budding forest spirit.

So Wyatt morphed into his human form while Dredre moved from his branch and on the top of his head, lying comfortably in his hair. Walking out of the isolated space, Wyatt found Susan awake and roaming the forest searching for Dredre.

"Ah!" Susan exclaimed seeing Wyatt suddenly appear next to her.

Wyatt placed his hand on Susan's lips, whispering urgently, "Ssh! She is still asleep," just as her voice threatened to disrupt the tranquility of the space. With a gentle hush, he ensured Dredre's slumber remained undisturbed.

"...", Susan's gaze locked with Wyatt's, her cheeks flushing with a shy intensity. Though she averted her eyes momentarily, there was a magnetic pull between them, evident in her hesitant yet determined stance. Despite her initial shyness, it seemed as though her very being yearned to draw nearer to Wyatt, betraying an unspoken desire for closeness.

"Hey, you," Wyatt whispered, his gaze tracing the crimson blush that crept across Susan's ear, neck, and collarbone. Each delicate curve seemed to beckon him, tempting him to press his lips against them, one by one, in a tantalizing sequence. The desire to savor the sweetness of each moment hung palpably in the air, as Wyatt's heart quickened with the anticipation of what might unfold between them. Yet, in that fleeting instant, time seemed to stand still, suspended in the delicate balance of longing and restraint.

"Hi, Wyatt. There is still time for the forest's spirit to be born. Did your training finish?" Susan asked as if unaware of the charged atmosphere enveloping them. Susan maintained her composed demeanor, avoiding direct eye contact with Wyatt. Yet, she subtly angled her body, offering him a glimpse of her delicate features adorned with a natural red blush. As Wyatt's warm breath caressed her skin, Susan's senses heightened, prompting her to close her eyes and bite gently on her lip, a reflexive response to the tingling sensation that coursed through her. Though she remained outwardly composed, inwardly, Susan's mind raced with unspoken thoughts and desires, unaware of the depths of longing mirrored in Wyatt's gaze, wondering, 'What is taking him so long? Why isn't he making his move?'

Since their unforgettable kiss, Susan and Wyatt found themselves seldom afforded moments of privacy together. Wyatt's demanding schedule seemed an insurmountable barrier, leaving them scant opportunity to steal time for themselves. Now, as they stood alone in a room, Susan's heart fluttered with anticipation, hoping Wyatt would seize the moment. Vulnerable yet hopeful, she stood before him, silently urging him to take the initiative.

However, as seconds turned to minutes, the anticipated move failed to materialize. Susan's anticipation gradually morphed into a gnawing sense of disappointment, tinged with a hint of confusion. She couldn't fathom why Wyatt, too, seemed reticent to bridge the unspoken gap between them. Despite the solitude they finally found, the palpable tension lingered, a silent reminder of the unspoken desires that simmered beneath the surface, waiting for the courage to surface.

With a mischievous grin adorning his lips, Wyatt gazed at Susan, bemused by her transparent anticipation. How could he miss the swirling thoughts evident in her demeanor? Yet, despite her unmistakable signals, their timing remained perpetually askew.

Just as Susan surrendered to her hopeful reverie, shutting her eyes in eager anticipation, their private moment was rudely interrupted by DreDre's awakening.

Susan's closed eyes shielded her from DreDre's curious gaze, oblivious to the interruption as she waited expectantly for Wyatt to take action. However, fate had other plans, and Susan's anticipation was about to be met with disappointment once more.

As Susan continued to wait in anticipation for Wyatt to make his move, her anticipation was turning into irritation every second she waited for Wyatt to make his move on her. She wondered what else would a girl have to do to get a boy to make his move. She was a total rookie in this field and wondered if she was doing it wrong.

Then a sudden thought came to Susan's mind, since she was the older of the two, the romantic part of their relationship fell on her shoulders. So what if Wyatt was not making his move? Maybe she should be the one making the move and teach him a thing or two. But the problem was she had zero experience in this field.

"Susan, you are turning red do you have a fever?" ignorant Dredre finally broke the silence in concern for Susan's well-

being. Listening to Dredre's voice, Susan opened her eyes in shock to find Dredre staring at her in concern while Wyatt doing his best to hold his laughter back.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 06:21

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City, TSR Guild Headquarters, Blood Rock Cave Dungeon, seed world

Wyatt was a lot taller compared to when Susan had first met him. Now she had to lift her head to look into his eyes. So she never noticed, Dredre who had cuddled up with his hair. Therefore she assumed they were alone, explaining her restrained yet bold action.

"I am fine Dredre, what are you doing in his hair?" Susan asked, glaring daggers at Wyatt. She felt embarrassed and ashamed. She put herself out there, opening up to Wyatt, only to feel mocked by his response. His laughter cut deep, intensifying her discomfort. It was too much to bear, the vulnerability she had shown now turned against her. Susan's cheeks flushed with a mix of anger and humiliation as she struggled to maintain her composure.

"I don't know how I woke up in Wyatt's hair. But, are you sure you're fine, you look red?" Dredre asked again, concern evident in her voice. If earlier Susan's redness was due to

shyness and a hint of blush, now it stemmed from a mixture of shame and rage directed squarely at Wyatt. Seeing him trying his best to hold back his laughter felt like mockery, twisting Susan's emotions into a knot of humiliation and indignation. Despite her efforts to compose herself, the heat of her anger radiated through her cheeks, betraying the turmoil within. Wyatt's attitude only fueled her simmering resentment.

"I'm fine, sweetie," Susan reassured Dredre, masking her inner turmoil with a forced smile. Despite her seething anger towards Wyatt, she maintained her patience with Dredre, refusing to let her emotions spill over. Behind her composed facade, Susan's eyes smoldered with unspoken fury fixated on Wyatt. "Dredre, let us go continue with the preparation," Susan redirected their attention, gracefully pivoting away from Wyatt's presence. Determined to not let his actions ruin her day, she chose to focus on the task at hand, leaving Wyatt to stew in the wake of her silent condemnation.

However, Wyatt's sudden and bold action caught Susan off guard as he grabbed her wrist and pulled her into his embrace. Shocked and bewildered, she stumbled slightly, her heart racing in her chest. Caught in Wyatt's arms, she could feel the warmth of his embrace enveloping her. Stuttering with a blush tinting her cheeks, she managed to utter, "Wyatt, what are you doing?" Her voice trembled with a mix of confusion and vulnerability, unsure of his intentions. Despite her uncertainty, there was a flicker of curiosity and perhaps even a hint of anticipation beneath the surface of her words.

Kissing Susan gently on her forehead, Wyatt whispered in her ear, "Trust me, I will make it up to you soon."

"Um," Susan meekly uttered, her voice barely above a whisper, as she nodded her head nervously, resembling a cornered and spooked rabbit. Caught off guard and unsure how to respond, she felt a surge of anxiety coursing through her, leaving her feeling vulnerable and exposed.

But Wyatt's words had sparked a sense of anticipation and excitement within Susan, erasing her anger toward him. She leaned into his embrace, reassured by his affectionate gesture.

"Humans are weird," Dredre muttered, recalling insights from the book she read to better assist Wyatt. It explained that when humans fell ill, they turned red and emitted heat or cold. Susan exhibited these signs, yet claimed she was fine. Dredre was puzzled over this contradiction, unsure how to interpret Susan's behavior.

"Dredre, don't you remember flying to my side in your sleep?" Wyatt asked, steering the conversation away, releasing Susan from his embrace.

"No, I don't remember doing anything like that. I had a pleasant sleep. But, did I disturb you?" Dredre asked, her tone laced with guilt. Concerned about potentially disrupting Wyatt's rest, she sought reassurance, hoping to alleviate any discomfort her actions may have caused.

"Nope, I was surprised by how cute our Dredre is when she is asleep," Wyatt remarked, reassuring Dredre, hoping to alleviate any discomfort she felt over something out of her control and she doesn't remember. "Dredre, how long till your forest's spirit is born?" he inquired, shifting focus to a different topic, to maintain a lighter atmosphere.

"Soon, it could be today or now. This part is not in my hands. All I know is it will happen and I can only wait," Dredre explained. If not for Susan persuading her to rest, she would not have slept but continued to watch her forest, eagerly anticipating the birth of its spirit.

"Okay, you girls do what you need to do. I'll be back in my isolated space. Call me when it's time," Wyatt announced, retreating to his isolated space. With a nod, he left Dredre and Susan to continue their preparations, trusting them to handle the preparations for the forest spirit's birth while he awaited their call.

In his isolated space, leaving his clone behind, Wyatt entered the Blood Rock Cave gate dungeon. Without delay, he drew a little blood from Cortney and used it to create a blood curse substitution card. The purpose? To transfer the hypnotic suggestion seed implanted into Cortney's soul pathways into her blood curse substitute.

After creating the blood curse substitute card using Cortney's blood, Wyatt then proceeded to use his soul energy manipulation to match his soul energy vibration to the vibrations of Cortney's soul pathways to transfer the hypnotic suggestion seed implanted in her by Handsome Fox into the card as carefully and precisely as possible without letting the hypnotic suggestion seed realize it was being moved from Cortney's body into a blood curse substitute.

It was difficult because the roots of the seed were too thin, though his soul pupils allowed him to distinguish them from Cortney's soul pathway. Moving them between Cortney and her blood curse substitute with his soul energy as a medium was easier said than done. But with patience, Wyatt had managed to move the entirety of the hypnotic suggestion seed and its roots into the blood curse substitute card.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 06:37

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City, TSR Guild Headquarters, Blood Rock Cave Dungeon

Having successfully removed the hypnotic suggestion planted in Cortney's body, Wyatt then lit up the calamity incense stick that he had prepared to wake Cortney and Bloodette from their sleep. Soon the aroma of the calamity incense stick filled the atmosphere of the blood rock cave.

Smelling the aroma, Cortney and Bloodette did not wake up, rather slept comfortably. Confused, Wyatt wondered if he should not have tried to remove the hallucination part of the calamity incense stick. The fragrance of the world calamity tree had a strong hallucination effect that powerful beings like to abuse for fun. Wyatt did not want his friend to get addicted to this fragrance. So he had removed that effect from it while retaining its ability to negate the Anesthesia Dragon's sleep breath. Wyatt wondered if doing so had lessened the effect of the fragrance.

Wyatt checked on Cortney and Bloodette using his soul pupils. To find that their current sleeping state was very different from their sleeping state earlier. Currently, they were not being forced to sleep rather they were choosing to sleep as if they were having a great time sleeping, this was the other effect of the fragrance of calamity incense stick which even the Elder Anesthesia Dragon appreciated.

It was because of this effect the Anesthesia Dragons allied with the World Calamity Tree and why the Elder Anesthesia Dragon Raukaul planned to groom Wyatt. With this ability, they could prolong their sleep even after their millennium sleeping period had ended.

Seeing that Cortney and Bloodette were no longer under the effect of the Anesthesia Dragon's sleep breath, Wyatt planned to head back into the seed world. With his work here done, he had no plans of waking them up or waiting for them to wake up, but as he prepared to leave Bloodette suddenly woke up, yelling in panic, "Cortney!" As such even Cortney woke up.

"Cortney," Bloodette continued as she tried to make sense of what was happening and her surroundings. Seeing, Wyatt she asked, "Wyatt, Cortney, What happened?"

"I am up!" Cortney said, waking up with no recollection of what had happened. She only remembers trying to practice blood rule within Bloodette's innate rune, but the next thing she knows she is waking up with Bloodette yelling her name.

"Cortney," seeing Cortney next to her all fine and dandy, Bloodette immediately jumped into her embrace and cried, letting out all her feelings.

Wyatt did not want any part of this so he planned to silently leave however, confused Cortney looked at him seeking answers, "What's going on? Why is she crying?"

"Sigh," Wyatt sighed feeling the window of his escape was closed.

"Bloodette, why is your realm so low?" Cortney exclaimed, having felt that Bloodette's realm was no longer strong and something she could not gauge, instead it had fallen to the beginning of the card student level, barely above the mortal realm.

"..." Bloodette did not answer, she just continued to weep in Cortney's embrace.

"Wyatt, what is going on why is she crying, and what happened to her strength?" getting no reply from Bloodette, who was weeping inconsolably in her embrace, she could only continue to console Bloodette by gently running her hands over her head and back. And turn to Wyatt for answers.

"It's a long story where do I start," Wyatt said, crossing his arms. Then he narrated, "Bloodette almost died trying to break the dungeon seal. The only reason she is alive after the punishment the dungeon seal imposed on her for trying to break it is because of her supreme being's immortal physique if not a hundred lives would not be enough for her to survive its wrath. It was hard to watch seeing her suffer in an extended coma."

"Why would she try to break the dungeon seal? She knows better than to do that. Wyatt, what happened? Where was I during all this happened?" Cortney asked in shock. She knew better than anyone how harshly the dungeon seal would react to Bloodette's rebellion. Which was why she was puzzled as to why she did not recall something so important and where she was. Honestly, she did not feel like she could have missed it as according to her it has not been that long. Her sense of time was still weeks behind.

Wyatt narrated the whole event to Cortney, helping her understand what happened and what was happening. He did not try to hide his role in all of this. That the only reason Cortney and the rest of his friends were targeted was because of him. Though he had managed to help them before it was too late, Wyatt knew that the situation could have been worse if he had not caught on to Handsome Fox's plans.

Out of all his friends, Bloodette and Cortney paid the heaviest price. Especially Bloodette. He did not know how to make up to her. Well, helping her get out of the Dungeon seal would be a start.

"I see," Cortney's embrace on Bloodette tightened, she could not imagine what Bloodette could have been through. Unlike her who had the orphanage, Bloodette only had her. Cortney then turned to Wyatt and said, "Wyatt this is not your fault. You do not need to blame yourself for what happened. It could have been the enemies of any of us. I am sure if the circle were to come to target you because of me you would not blame me for that right? So chill. Besides you did your best to fix everything."

"You are too easy-going, I don't think I could forgive you so easily if someone were to target my friends and me because of your mistake even though you are one of my friends," Wyatt said honestly, since he judged his friends with higher standards, he had to judge himself with similar standards. He cannot have a different set of rules for himself.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[992 words]

Chapter 1927 Broken

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 06:49

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City, TSR Guild Headquarters, Blood Rock Cave Dungeon

Any form of relationship was complicated, it would be easier if people involved were honest with each other. For that to be possible there should be trust between the people. However, it was hard to trust a stranger. Hence, the games. They make relationships bothersome and fun at the same time.

The best way to thread through relationships would be to reciprocate what you expect from the person in the relationship to them. If you expect unconditional loyalty from them then give them your unconditional loyalty, if they acknowledge and reciprocate it then congratulations if not it was not meant to be.

Many people would not agree with this but this was how Wyatt dealt with his relationships. For this to work one cannot be partial and selfish, otherwise the relationship would turn into an abusive or toxic one. This was why Wyatt felt it was important that he gave his friends what he expected from them.

This was why, even if none of his friends blamed him for the Handsome Fox incident, Wyatt never forgave himself for what had happened. It was one of the motivating reasons why he did not hesitate to get aid from the Southern Royal family and the rest of the Card World to hunt down Gideon Grim, a.k.a Handsome Fox. Believing the only way for him to redeem himself in his friends' eyes was by putting the person who harmed them six feet under.

"Woah, by that logic, one mistake, and I am dead to you. Dude, that's cold and dark. Aren't friends meant to be people who like or tolerate you despite your quirks and shortcomings? If I am not allowed to make mistakes among friends, then when am I allowed to make mistakes? Among my enemies?" Courtney did not like Wyatt's words and his take on friendship one bit.

Cortney felt Wyatt's friendship was calculative, weighing gains and risks, like a business deal. As if demanding I gave you good money now you give me quality goods, otherwise I will no longer do business with you.

In Cortney's books, friendship was nothing like that, her version of friendship was instinctive and intuitive, you do what feels right at the moment. If your friend needs help, if you can you go help, if you can't you find a way to help. No questions or excuses. If your friends screw you over, you grab them by the collar, punch them silly, and demand an explanation. Never turn your back on friends.

"This is my friendship, it is ugly but it works," Wyatt said sticking to his version of friendship.

"Asshole, that kind of friendship doesn't work. All it is doing is hiding the fact that you are a coward. A coward who is too afraid to trust the people you call friends. Some people's fear is obvious like being afraid of entering a dark room but you are afraid of trusting and fear betrayal and heartbreak. Only those closest to you can see it and feel it. Wyatt, it hurts knowing that you cannot trust us," Cortney said, as she gazed at Wyatt with pity.

"Cortney, you are mistaken. It is not that I don't trust you. But my trust in you only lasts till you keep it. Unless you betray it, I will unquestionably trust you till the end of times," Wyatt corrected Cortney.

Wyatt's take on relationships might appear calculative like a business deal, but actually, he was just unforgiving. He was not only intolerant of others' mistakes but his own mistakes too. Which was my he couldn't forgive himself for putting his friends in harm's way.

"No matter, how you put it, Wyatt, I am worried about you. I fear you will never know the joy of truly trusting someone.

I was abandoned and survived the streets by myself, while you lived in a cozy home with both your parents till you reached your legal age. Out of the two of us, if someone is allowed to have such a skewered take on friendship or any kind of relationship, that should be me. How come I turned out fine while you're broken?

I don't know who or what broke you but I promise I will help you regain what you lost because unlike you I don't need something in return to be somebody's friend," Cortney declared with resolute eyes.

"Good luck with that, sweetie. I have lived longer than you and experienced a lot more things than you. Yes, I can't beat your tragic childhood but when it comes to trust, regardless of who it is, they have only one chance if they fail to cherish it then they don't deserve a second chance. Besides, why are we wasting our time debating this? I will let

you two catch up," Wyatt prepared to enter the seed world but he paused when he heard Cortney ask, "What if that someone is Anna or Susan?"

"They would never knowingly and willingly betray my trust, if they do then you know my answer," Wyatt replied heartlessly.

"Don't you love them? Can you be this decisive if there was such a time," Cortney asked with a smile since Wyatt had already fallen into her trap.

"My love cannot become a reason for the suffering of other people whom I care for and who trusted me," Wyatt said turning to look at Cortney, she had dug up a very sensitive topic.

"I see. It is reassuring to know I have such a caring friend," Cortney nodded, closing her eyes momentarily. Then, she opened them again, squinting slightly, as she asked, "Did you know about Handsome Fox's plans beforehand and were you willing to let him harm me and our friends?"

"No, I did not know Handsome Fox's plans beforehand. If I had known, he would never have succeeded," Wyatt replied resolutely and sincerely with clenched teeth, he felt enraged just recalling that incident.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,017 words]

Chapter 1928 Inner-Demons

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 06:57

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City, TSR Guild Headquarters, Blood Rock Cave Dungeon

Listening to Wyatt's reply a sly grin graced Cortney's lips. She had Wyatt right where she wanted him. With a gentle smile, she used Wyatt's words against him, "If you did not know of his plans and did not participate in his plans to harm us in any way, then why are you blaming yourself for what happened? Didn't you just say you will not blame Anna and Susan as long as they don't break your trust in them knowingly and willingly?"

"..." Wyatt was speechless, hearing Cortney use his words against him. But then shaking his head he said, "I don't blame myself because of Handsome Fox. I blame

myself because I should have known that my enemies would try to harm those around me. I blame myself for not doing everything in my power to ensure your safety. If I had done my part to ensure your safety, someone like Handsome Fox would never have been able to get close to you guys let alone hurt you guys."

"Wyatt! Who do you think you are?" Cortney yelled, seeing Wyatt flip the metaphorical table on her. "I can understand you are unforgiving and intolerant of mistakes as it's harder for some people to trust others but this, this is madness. Who the fuck do you think you are? Answer me, who the fuck do you think you are? Are you god? Do you want to create an indestructible bubble around all the people you care about? Well, you can't, and for good reason. Because you are practically imprisoning the people you care about with your overprotective bullshit. Wake up, or I will slap you silly until you wake up."

From what I recall, demigods from the Southern Royal family were guarding the city. Yet, he outsmarted them and lured us outside to complete his plan. When he can play with demigods what can you a card master do? Nobody is at fault here not Corey or the Southern Royal family or you. Yes, the demigods from the Southern royal family dropped the ball but it happens. The enemy was smarter than them. So stop suffering over what you happened and live the moment with us. You freaking managed to save all of us. This calls for celebration."

"Cortney, you don't understand. Things are not as simple, I managed to save you guys but there are still some things that I cannot take back. Corey blames herself for leading you guys to the dungeon I don't know if she can ever mentally recover from that, Bloodette was tortured by the dungeon seal she almost lost all the memories of you, and You were thrown in the blood-rule source it is a miracle you survived that long in there."

You guys would not have to go through all that if I had done my job as a good friend. The only reason you guys were targets was because you were my friends. You guys trusted me, and I became the reason for your pain and suffering. I cannot let that go," Wyatt revealed, he hated the fact that once again he was a source of pain and suffering for his friends. What had transpired back on Earth had repeated itself. Though he managed to save Cortney, Corey, Susan, and Bloodette, he couldn't save the friends back on earth. He can never save them.

"So what? Are going to stop being friends with us?" Cortney asked fearing the worst.

"No, I will try my best to be your friend," Wyatt declared resolutely.

"Well then, I have to tell you that you are not doing a job at being my friend right now," Cortney remarked.

"What do you mean?" Wyatt asked with a frown.

"You blaming yourself for something that was not your fault is causing me pain and suffering. Tell me, Wyatt, will you continue to let your twisted sense of friendship become the reason for the pain and suffering of your friends?" Cortney once again used Wyatt's words against him.

"I-I ..." Wyatt was stuck, that's when he realized he was letting his past stop him from growing.

"I am sure none of us involved wants to see you blame yourself and feel guilty for what happened. If you continue to do that you are only causing us worry and pain. Wyatt, now you know what is causing your friend's pain and suffering, will you let it continue or decisively cut it from its roots?" Cortney asked Wyatt seriously, with a stern gaze.

"How can I not feel guilty for what happened? Otherwise, it would be like I am taking your friendship for granted. Taking you guys for granted. I would be like I am taking advantage of you guys, using you in my time of need and abandoning you when you needed me," Wyatt wasn't just saying this for the sake of argument. But it was something he was genuinely worried about.

Back on Earth, the families of his friends who died because of him blamed him for being selfish and using their big picture as a reason to mask it. During that period, Wyatt was also beginning to feel that he was taking advantage of his friends to achieve what he wanted. But he also understood that it was survivor's guilt getting the best of him.

"What the fuck are you talking about about? Do you want me to slap you, because right now I am really feeling like slapping you. Just wink for a slap or nod for a punch. Forget it, I am going to punch you anyway," Cortney prepared to punch Wyatt in the face, she had enough of his whining. But before her fist could reach Wyatt, Bloodette stopped her. Then looking at Wyatt who appeared to be struggling with his demons, she said, "Wyatt, it is okay to take advantage fo your friends. Besides, It's not taking advantage if your friends are okay with it."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 07:12

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City, TSR Guild Headquarters, Blood Rock Cave Dungeon

"It is not taking advantage if your friends are okay with it."

Listening to Bloodette's words, Wyatt who was still struggling to forgive himself for the Handsome Fox incident recalled the true reason why it was hard for him to let go of the guilt and blame when Cortney requested him to.

'Dr. Wyatt, don't blame yourself. We're doing this for us, our families, and our children.'

'Listen, kid, use me as you will. Just rid the Earth of those alien blood bastards.'

'Wyatt, go! I said leave us behind, damn it. You need to live.'

'Promise me, you will return Earth to its rightful owners, us humans. Promise m—'

'Sir, we want to do this. This is our planet too. Just press the button when it's time.'

'Unless you fail to deliver on your promise, you have no reason to blame yourself.'

'Wyatt, listen to me. My death is not your fault. I choose to give my life to see the dream you spoke.'

'I-I maybe *cough* leaving early. But don't think you are off the hook. When we win, remember to pour a glass of beer for me. Then, we are square.'

It's not that Wyatt did not understand, only that it had become a painful cycle. The same pattern kept repeating, and surprise surprise he was right at the origin and end of this painful cycle but never through it. The people who went through it were the people who mattered the most to him, who gave him their trust and loyalty.

However, this time all the people involved managed to survive the painful cycle, but Wyatt still remembers that in the past that was not the case. He would always be the lone survivor of the painful cycle. That was only because the people involved would risk and sacrifice their lives to protect him.

"Yes, things have changed," Wyatt suddenly yelled in a realization.

His struggle was not the guilt or blame, his struggle was with his incapability. Incapable of being able to protect the people who were willing to give their lives for him with a word. He did not have to use calamity daughter gems on them, he did not promise them riches, they just believed in him and his ideas. So they shared his ideas and were willing to give their lives to see him fulfill those ideas. These people were the dearest to Wyatt but he could only watch as they were mowed down by a being that possessed what he then believed to be god-like prowess.

Now things have changed, this time he was actually being targeted by entities with god-like powers. Repeating the painful cycle, however, he was not incapable he finally managed to save his friends. He was so focused on what had happened, what could happen, and what he could have done that he did not see what he had done.

Wyatt did not manage to break the painful cycle but he managed to give it a different ending. A favorable ending, favorable to him and his friends.

'Just because gravity is pulling you down. You don't lay flat on your back/belly. You crawl, you learn to walk, then you learn to run, then you make rockets, freeing yourself of gravity's constraints.'

Just because there were people out there who did not like seeing others rise and would go to any lengths to keep them grounded, that did not mean that Wyatt would stay grounded. He will struggle, he might not succeed on his first try, he might not succeed on his hundredth or even thousandth try, damn it he will never give up trying until he was where he wants to be.

Today, he had managed to change the ending of the painful cycle, but tomorrow he was going to break the painful cycle altogether, to live the carefree life he dreamed of with the people who matter to him.

"Has he gone crazy?" Bloodette asked Cortney, seeing Wyatt scream something totally unrelated starting into the void.

"I think so," Cortney declared without even checking, and then asked, "Now can I punch him."

"Sure, go ahead maybe that will awaken him from his stupor," Bloodette nodded, giving Cortney a green signal to punch Wyatt in the face.

"Finally," said Cortney sucking Bloodette into her innate blood rune, she muttered, "Blood Armament: Demolition Gauntlets."

'Cortney, I said to punch him not send him to hospital,' Bloodette's voice echoed in Cortney's mind. As she wrapped around Cortney's arm and morphed into a huge blood-red Gauntlet.

'Wyatt is strong, this is barely enough to enlighten him,' Cortney argued as she balled her hand into a fist, it looked very much like a tiny red wrecking ball the size of a basketball. Then, raising her fist high, aiming for Wyatt's nose, she launched her punch yelling aloud in her mind, 'Demolition Punch: Brutal Enlightenment.'

Cortney's was so fast that the wind in the surroundings had not time to escape, they heated up and burst into a brilliant surrounding her fist. It speeded toward Wyatt's face as Bloodette's scream echoed in Cortney's mind, 'Stop! I said to punch him not kill him.'

Cortney was unfazed by Bloodette's scream, as she knew enlightenment required a good spanking. Her lips opened in a grin revealing her silver teeth. As the fist grew closer to Wyatt's face the grin on her face grew wider. But a fraction of a second away from impact, her fist came to an involuntarily halt. It lost all its speed and momentum.

Cortney felt a strong but invisible force binding her fist, forcing it to halt before it could reach Wyatt.

"What the heck do you think you are doing?" A mad voice came from behind Cortney's big fist. Then Wyatt's face slowly emerged from behind her fist and stared at her in mockery as he said, "It's a thousand years too early for you to beat me. But since you raised your fist to punch me, I hope you were prepared to get punched."

"No, can you let this one go with a simple sorry."

"Nope, you know the rules: Only throw punches if you can take them."

"How about a sorry and I give you a peek at my breasts?"

"Your clothes barely manage to cover them, there isn't much left that I haven't seen yet."

"Then how about I let you feel them?"

"..."

"No? How about I let you squeeze them a little."

"Forget it."

"See Bloodette, I told you, this always works against virgins."

"Now you are asking for it."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 07:26

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City, TSR Guild Headquarters, Blood Rock Cave Dungeon

When it comes to dressing, of all the women in Wyatt's life, Cortney wore the most slut—provocative and revealing clothes. No, that's not the right word, she dressed boldly. That's it, her taste in clothes was bold. She left very little to the imagination. Wyatt, like many others, justified her choice of clothing, believing it was easier for her to fight in those clothes. And as a bonus, her ample assets would keep her enemies distracted.

However, when she was fighting or active, the little clothes she had on could barely cover her voluptuous body.

So Wyatt was not lying when he said there wasn't much left for him to see when Cortney offered to flash him her boobs as a peace offering. Neither did it imply that he had already seen them without her knowledge or consent.

"Wyatt, you drive a hard bargain. Fine for one minute you can have your way with my breasts but no pictures," Cortney said struggling to free her hand from the invisible force trapping it.

Wyatt's expression shifted to disbelief as he found Cortney's words absurd, uttering, "What?"

"She said you can do anything to her breast for a minute," the red gauntlet spoke in Bloodette's voice.

"I know what she said," Wyatt snapped and then said in irritation, "I can't believe I got lectured by you two morons. Do you know how dumb you two sound right now?"

"Hey, who are you calling moron? My plan is brilliant. If it were someone else, they would have fallen for it. You know it. Admit it, you almost considered my offer," Cortney retorted.

"Wait, Cortney. Do you want someone to grope your breasts?" Wyatt asked Cortney to get a sense of clarity.

"Of course not. Why would I want that?" Cortney looked at Wyatt as if he was the moron he accused her of being.

"Then why would you offer it," Wyatt did not understand what was going through her head when she offered him to grope her breasts for a minute.

"It's a distraction," Cortney said as if it was supposed to be obvious. Then she continued to explain, "Here's how it was supposed to work. You let go of me to grope my breast, letting your guard down, and I use the opportunity to punch you on your nuts. Possibly destroying all your hope of becoming a father in the future. When you are rolling on the ground in pain, I use that opportunity to slit your throat or escape depending on the situation. Simple."

"You moron, that is the stupidest thing I have heard," Wyatt said, feeling if someone was capable enough to stop Cortney's sneak attack at such a close range then they could do it again, regardless of the distraction.

"Is it though?" Cortney did not agree with Wyatt.

"Let me demonstrate what would have happened if I were a pervert interested in the underage child," Saying that Wyatt mobilized his celestial force to lift Cortney in the air by binding all her limbs. Then spread them apart.

Cortney was shocked as the invisible force hung her mid-air while retraining her hands and legs and spreading them apart. Seeing Wyatt come close to her with an evil grin, Cortney began to panic. Despite her trust in Wyatt, she was genuinely scared. She struggled, but it was pointless. She felt like a pig at the mercy of the butcher.

"What's the matter, baby doll, you scared? Daddy Wyatt will take good care of your milk makers," Wyatt got into the character and began to tease Cortney.

"Okay, Wyatt, you were right. I get it, my idea was dumb. You made your point, you can stop now," Cortney conceded in sheer fear. Even though she knew this was not real, she hated this feeling.

"No, my one minute hasn't started yet," Wyatt continued to tease her, recalling the strength behind her punch, if he was a mere card master and her punch had landed on his face, he would have swallowed all 32 of his teeth and would have been disfigured for life.

"Wyatt, I am begging you to stop. I am sorry. Just punch me a few hundred times, but not this," Cortney teared up.

"No, one thousand punches," Wyatt bargained, as the purpose of this was to teach Cortney a lesson just like how she helped him get his thoughts in order. After the incident with Handsome Fox, he had been working nonstop at a very high intensity. If not for his body no longer being bound by mortal limitations, he would have died out of exhaustion or at least had a mental breakdown.

"Fine, a thousand punches. Now let go of me," Cortney readily agreed. She did not care if Wyatt punched her a hundred thousand times as long as she was out of that vulnerable position.

"We have a deal," Wyatt withdrew his celestial force restraining Cortney. Falling on her bed, Cortney rubbed her cuffs while Bloodette separated from her innate rune. Then she threw an angry gaze at Wyatt, feeling Wyatt went too far with his joke.

However, her glare soon morphed into astonishment as Wyatt threw a punch to her gut. She instinctively prepared to defend herself, but her body would not move it was restrained by a force. It was not the invisible force from earlier, but a force she was very familiar with, the Will of the Card World.

Boom

Wyatt mercilessly slammed his fist into Cortney's gut, sending her hurling toward the wall of the cave. Cracks similar to spiderwebs formed on the cave wall as it stopped Cortney.

"Wyatt, what the heck?" Bloodette asked Wyatt in shock. She thought Wyatt was joking when he said he wanted to punch Cortney a thousand times.

"Now, do you truly know why your idea was dumb, or do you need me to use the other 999 punches to help you understand?" Wyatt asked Cortney, who barely managed to stand on her feet.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 07:26

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City, TSR Guild Headquarters, Blood Rock Cave Dungeon

Cough-Kawf-Cough

It took Cortney all of her strength to stand up on her feet. Then listening to Wyatt's words, she responded, "I get it, I cannot lie."

"That would be an oversimplification of your Tao Tongue physique's limitation. You do what you say. Period," Wyatt corrected and asked, "You should know better than anyone that trickery is not your fighting style, What changed?"

"I met with this Agent in Fine Gold Guards, she is so awesome. She is weak but easily defeats people stronger than her. I saw her use that trick, her enemy was so distracted by her body that he did not see the bone knife she was hiding in her leg. With one swift move, she cut off his head. Agent Khan is the best," Cortney narrated the events that led her to make some changes to her fighting style.

"Agent Khan, by chance are you talking about Debra Khan?" Wyatt asked Cortney, hearing her mention Agent Khan from Fine Gold Guards hiding a bone knife in her leg.

"Yes, her full name is Agent Debra Khan. Do you know her?" Cortney asked in enthusiasm while the blood rule in her ego gem automatically mobilized to heal her up. Her mutated ego-gem came with many such nifty perks.

"Yes, I do. I made her origin card, and she works in my company. Last I checked, she was Jaya's bodyguard. How did you meet her?" Wyatt was surprised someone managed to force Debra to resort to trickery in this city. After all, with the origin card he created for her, apart from his calamity daughter gems there weren't many that could reduce her to that state in this city.

"Oh right, you are now the secret owner of the Fine Gold," Cortney recalled. Then, she continued saying, "She is in charge of the orphanage's security now."

"What the fuck? Why would an orphanage require such strong security in my city? Didn't the Bright Lions and the Tiger squadron get rid of all the child traffickers when they took over the city's streets?" Wyatt asked in concern. After all, In a third-

tier city, mobilizing someone of Debra's prowess was like using a nuclear head to deal with a small insurgence. He could not believe that in his city, an orphanage needed such high-level protection. Then what about the safety of regular citizens?

"No, they did get rid of the traffickers. It's not them, the issue is something entirely different. It is regarding the land where the orphanage was built. Diana is not only renovating the old orphanage but has expanded it by taking over the surrounding area. People are okay with her renovating the old orphanage but they don't agree with her expansion plan. So there has been some trouble. Mostly with the construction work. Nobody has threatened the children yet. But Diana has moved her best people preparing for the worst," Cortney explained while doing some warm-up exercises. Her body was completely healed. Now, she was checking if still some hidden injury that required attention.

"Takeover?" Wyatt asked with a frown. Diana might have submitted to him but she was still as domineering to others.

"It's not as bad as it sounds. Diana had informed the owners of the surrounding land to vacate them as she was buying their land for thrice the maximum market price.

However, the landowners do not agree as their lands are not far from the center of the city. Those who own lands there are all wealthy and do not need money. Those lands are their investment and Diana's offer only makes them more sure about their investment.

They had asked Diana to use the money she was willing to pay them to buy land somewhere else and build a new and bigger orphanage and they were even willing to donate money for the good cause.

However, Diana feels that the current location of the orphanage is optimum. It makes it easier for the orphanage to avail of all the benefits and aid provided by the city. This is especially true for the older kids who have to commute to training centers and academies in the city—"

"Diana isn't doing enough. Follow me, I take it you also want to check on the orphanage," As Cortney explained the crux of the matter with the orphanage she was interrupted by Wyatt as he had heard enough to understand what was happening. It was the same old story, a bunch of wealthy snobs prioritizing their investments over the benefit of society.

Yes, the demigods were monitoring the city. Now, even Field Marshal was monitoring the city, but they were not allowed to interfere with the city's activities. They were only here to protect Wyatt and his friends and family. The Southern royal family's demigods or Field Marshal could make an exception in Sky Blossom City's case as it was happening under their watch but that was not possible as it would spook the other Cities' fat cats.

'Today it was some third-rate city, tomorrow it could be them,' with this thought those fat cats would band together and do something stupid that would affect the economy of the Southern Region. Even though they were mere fat cats, the Southern Royal family needed them to keep the economy stable. Regardless of how powerful the royal family was, they cannot ignore these people. Which was why the demigods hardly ever interfered in the mundane world when they had all the power to do so. Also, the reason why the Royal families and Central government don't tolerate unaffiliated or rogue demigods who do not understand the effect of their actions on society. To ease the pain of a few they end up causing pain to many.

However, Wyatt wasn't a demigod but held power stronger than a regular demigod. He was not bound by these unspoken rules required to maintain the fragile balance in society.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 07:45

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City, TSR Guild Headquarters, Blood Rock Cave Dungeon

"Yes, I was planning to do that," Cortney nodded in agreement to Wyatt's proposal, and then turning to Bloodette, she informed, "Open the gate. Let's go and check on the kids. They must be worried since it has been a while since we visited them."

"About that, I don't think it is safe for us to go out of the dungeon seal right now," Bloodette solemnly said surprising Wyatt and Cortney.

"Why?" Cortney asked in concern.

"I feel a very strong spirituality scanning and probing the location of the gate. It is very strong, enough to detect the dungeon seal, but not enough to influence it. So we are safe in here," Bloodette explained.

"Oh, I see. Bloodette relax. We have nothing to worry about. I know that person. Though she might be pissed that I did not deliver what I had promised," Wyatt assured Bloodette, knowing that the strong spirituality she felt was none other than the Field Marshal. The main reason he was heading out right now was to own up to his failure to keep his word to her. As for Diana, he could have used his calamity daughter gems to relay his instructions to her. Since he was heading out anyway he decided to do both.

"So, it is okay if we go out?" Bloodette asked for confirmation.

"Yes," Wyatt nodded and took the lead.

As soon as Wyatt stepped out of the dungeon gate, he heard the Field Marshal's voice in his mind, 'You finally showed up.'

'I am sorry, something came up so I got delayed. Give me a few more days, I will deliver what I promised,' Wyatt apologized and asked for time.

'I see you found Cortney. It is good to know that the Tao Tongue is safe. Fine, take your time but just don't take too long,' Field Marshal gave Wyatt the extension he sought seeing Cortney walk out of the dungeon gate, with the Bloodette's head sticking out from her neck. She was surprised to find that Bloodette was staring at her.

'Thank you, what about what I had asked you? Did the sinister snake show signs of going berserk?' Wyatt could have called Corey on her demon codex to check on her but asked the Field Marshal instead.

'No, the entire night was uneventful,' the Field Marshal responded.

'Thank you,' Wyatt said politely. Then, he took Cortney's blood substitute card along with a bunch of storage cards adding, 'By the way, I have another card with Gideon's ability sealed in it. And also, here, the new stock of VR cards.'

Collecting the cards from Wyatt's hand using her spirituality, Field Marshal replied, 'No need to thank me. Corey is a citizen of the Southern region her safety is my duty.'

'Alright. Then, goodbye,' Wyatt felt awkward saying goodbye to the Field Marshal for obvious reasons. But he had to because even though he knew the Field Marshal would be monitoring him, he did not want to hear her live commentary in his head. Now that Field Marshal was babysitting him, she had nothing better to do. Also, she has become

more talkative ever since she approved him as Anna's fiance despite his various efforts to inform her that their relationship had not developed to that point.

"Wyatt, I contacted Diana, she is in the R&D building with Cindy and Vivian. And also the orphanage headmaster has invited you to have breakfast with the kids," Cortney informed.

"Call Diana and others, let us all have breakfast at the orphanage as we discuss business," Wyatt had little time on his hands he had to resort to such meetings to use his time optimally.

...

Inside an SUV headed to the orphanage, Wyatt long at Diana seated beside him and asked, "I heard you are having a problem with the expansion of the orphanage."

"Master Wyatt, it's not a problem worth your attention. Besides it is just some greedy and privileged people causing trouble. In the end, they have no other choice but to take our money and hand over the land," Old Diana would not be willing to give a dime to the landowners and just would have directly occupied their land but under Wyatt's management he had warned everyone from such behavior. So, she reluctantly offered triple the market value for their land.

"Good to know that you got it all covered but you see my city does not have a place for greedy people who only own to take from the city and have nothing to offer in return," Wyatt declared and instructed, "Send an ultimate to all those opposing your expansion proposal, they have an hour to make a choice, vacate their land, or leave the city. I am sure that you, Bright Lions, and TSR guild are more than capable enough to fill the gap their departure will bring to the city's economy."

Listening to Wyatt's cold words, Diana and Cindy looked at him with radiant eyes. Now this was in line with their way of doing things. Finally, their new boss was speaking their language.

"As for the money for their land," Wyatt asked Diana intently.

"I will add it to their accounts if they willingly give their lands for the expansion of the orphanage," Diana said.

"No, donate it to the orphanage in their names. I am sure the orphanage will appreciate their contribution," Wyatt corrected Diana. Listening to him, Cortney clapped in enthusiasm, "Yes, yes, the orphanage will appreciate their contribution."

"I understand, Master Wyatt," Diana nodded with a cruel smile finally getting a glance at how her Master wanted her to do things. Then she added, "Master, I thought of a new project. I want your permission to see through it."

"What is it?" Wyatt asked with a frown as Fine Gold already had a lot on its plate.

"It is related to the Orphanage development project."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 08:13

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"It is related to the Orphanage development project," Diana shared a little, trying to gauge Wyatt's reaction watching his microexpressions before she proposed her entire plan to him.

Knowing what Diana was doing, Wyatt felt this project might be important to her, so he nodded ignoring her little actions, "Continue."

"I am planning to build orphanages in the other cities where our Fine Gold has influence," Diana revealed. Then noticing no change in Wyatt's expression, she thought no reaction was better than a negative reaction and added, "This is just a start I plan to do this in every city our Fine Gold expands to in the future."

It was a noble idea and seemed simple for a powerful company like Fine Gold. However, the new Fine Gold under Wyatt's influence and management had expanded to the entire Blossom district. It was now spread across more than hundreds of cities.

The wealth they would require to build a capable orphanage in each city would add up to an enormous fortune. Not to mention Diana wanted to continue building orphanages in the future as the company expanded to other cities, making it a long-term project. They would have to start managing separate funds for such a project aside from the funds they would need to keep the orphanages they had already built running.

Diana alone would not take responsibility for such a big financial decision within the Fine Gold. Therefore she sought Wyatt's permission. Especially, Seeing how he handled the orphanage expansion problem. She became confident that Wyatt would green-light her project.

"Wow, now that's a plan I can get on board. Where do I sign?" Courtney announced impressed by Diana's idea. She had long been approached by Wyatt's subordinates to join them including the Fine Gold, but she rejected them all, as she planned to be the

protector of the orphanage she grew up in. Believing with her around, it would not be a problem for the orphanage would keep running for another century without a hitch.

But now that the Fine Gold had taken responsibility for the orphanage, there wasn't much for her to do. So hearing Diana's idea which could help numerous other orphans from across the Blossom district and the Southern region in the foreseeable future, she saw a career path she could get behind.

Contrary to Cortney's enthusiasm after hearing Diana's big plan, Wyatt had a disappointed look on his face. Cindy who was in the front passenger seat noticed his disappointment from the rear-view mirror and Daina felt it as she sat next to him.

As for Cortney, who was cramped in the rear seat behind them with Vivian, she had no idea of Wyatt's reaction but rather she was thinking of possible ways to contribute to Diana's plan. She was good at fighting but they were trying to build orphanages not tear them down. Maybe she could be the orphanage security head like Agent Debra Khan currently was. She would protect the kids by all means.

"Boss, I know the orphanage will require a lot of funds but I was thinking we can start a trust fund and have the wealthy and influential donate to it for the well-fare of the city," Cindy spoke of trying to salvage Diana's idea, as Diana was shell-shocked seeing Wyatt get disappointed over her idea. She expected a pushback or even a rejection but a disappointed look, she did not understand what to make of it. Didn't he just say he hated people who only knew how to take from society and did not contribute back to it?

"Sigh!" Wyatt let out a sigh listening to Cindy's trust proposal. Listening to Wyatt's sigh, even Cortney awakened from her fantasy and intently stared at Wyatt's head from behind.

"Cortney, if you dare to hit me on the head you will pay dearly. Don't forget, you still owe me 999 punches," Sensing Cortney's intent stare on the back of his head Wyatt immediately warned Cortney. It did not take a genius to guess what was going on in her mind.

"Dalton Wyatt, if dare reject to her project. I will fight you even if it costs me my life," Cortney was indeed thinking of hitting Wyatt on the head. But now that she had been warned, she used her arm to lock Wyatt's neck from behind. But no matter how much strength she put in her arm she could not choke him. Frustrated, she said, "Is it about money? I will fund it."

Vivan who was next to Cortney, stared intently at her ready to attack her at any moment. If not for Wyatt asking to stand down she would have long attacked Cortney. Feeling her ill intent, Bloodette's head popped out of Cortney's back and she stared into Vivian's stare, ready to protect Cortney at all cost.

"You will fund the project, with what money?" Wyatt asked Cortney, even though it was not money that made him disappointed in Diana's plan.

"The money from mining blood-rule rocks from Bloodette's dungeon seal and selling her blood-rule pills should be more than enough for the project," Cortney said feeling challenged, As the master of a supreme being and sole owner of a blood-

rule holy cave, Cortney was sitting on a lot of wealth, enough to fund a war let alone running a few orphanages. Regardless of Cortney and Bloodette's personal relationship, the fact that Cortney's origin card had Bloodette's contract in it did not change not to mention the soul pact card.

Listening to Cortney say how she was going to fund their entire project both Diana and Cindy, who had almost believed that their project was scrapped, finally saw a glimmer of hope. Then they eagerly awaited Wyatt's response. After all, they were his subordinates. Even though they were disappointed with Wyatt's reaction to their project, they did rush to blame him and waited to listen to his reason.

"Let go of my neck, genius. First, listen to what I have to say," Wyatt could easily free himself but did not bother to. Then, when Cortney retracted her arm around his neck, he added, "It's not the money I am worried about."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 08:18

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

With the VR universe gaining popularity, the money he gained from currency exchange, and selling VR slime cards to powerful organizations Wyatt was making more money than he could spend unless the demon war were to break out. So spare a little of his wealth to build orphanages not a big deal for Wyatt.

"If it is not about the money, then what is it?" Cortney asked with a frown. She had finally found what to do with her life and could not believe Wyatt, her best friend, was her first hurdle. She was pissed right now, time and again her eyes wandered to the back of Wyatt's head with an impulse to slap it but Bloodette stopped her, knowing that it would not end well for Cortney.

"Diana, what are your plans for the orphanages you are planning to build? What is your motivation for starting such a project? Don't tell me you are doing this with some naive

idea of giving back to society or helping others," Wyatt asked Diana, ignoring Cortney. He was kind of afraid that if he did not give her a valid reason for his rejection soon enough, she might slap his head ignoring his warning. Of all his friends, this one and Corey were very impulsive and very predictable.

"Well—" Diana was without words because she was doing it with such an idea. She believed with their current influence and strength they could afford to entertain such naive ideas.

"What's wrong with opening a few orphanages with the idea to do something good?" Cortney asked with a frown, she was starting to consider Wyatt a villain.

"Cindy, Diana, Cortney, you three have been to orphanages at some point in your lives, you should know better than that. Such ideas are not enough to run an orphanage successfully. You guys are not talking about starting a zoo or ranch but raising kids. Your idea is noble but in the long run, it will not help the kids," Wyatt pointed out to the three that their motivation to undertake such a big project was flawed.

In Cortney, Diana, and Cindy's case, the reason these three were successful in their life despite their tragic start was not because the orphanage showered them with love and care, but because its atmosphere toughened them. Though the orphanage was not as tough as the streets, it was like a beginner's town in a game where they learned how to work and navigate the streets from a very young age. Not to forget a little luck on their sides. As for those who failed to adapt to orphanages' tough atmosphere and did not have luck, they vanished.

Diana's idea was noble, knowing her, what she was planning to do was start a huge greenhouse for orphan kids. A place where the kids will know no trouble and difficulty. Allowing them to grow up in a caring atmosphere with love and peace.

But what about the kids once they become legal adults and have to enter society? Was Diana's orphanage capable of giving them the mentality and skills to survive in society on their own? Unless she planned to provide for these kids till they died, her naive motivation to start the orphanage would not work.

In Wyatt's book, this was overcorrection, many new parents do this. They think they will give their children a better childhood than the one their parents gave them and end up ruining their kids with their own hands. Their kids would be so spoiled and ruined that they end up spending most of their adult lives with parents trying to figure out a way to survive society.

But the orphanage cannot actually do that for every kid in their care with new children coming in. Even if they tried to no amount of money would be enough.

"Master Wyatt, if you are worried about that, then please be rest assured I have already thought of it and come up with programs that will help the kids develop the necessary

skills that will help them when they're introduced to society. And also I plan to recruit the best and brightest into our various organizations," Diana assured Wyatt that his worries were unwarranted as she had already thought of it before proposing the project to him.

"Yes, see. Now you have reason to reject the project," Cortney yelled in excitement kicking the back of Wyatt's seat.

"Damn it, Cortney. For goodness sake, pipe down. Or I will throw you out of the car," Wyatt said in annoyance and thought, 'I liked her better when she still felt guilty toward me because her mother killed young Wyatt's parents.' Wyatt did feel bad for thinking as such but that was how he felt.

"You are only annoyed because Diana got you cornered with her preparedness," Cortney retorted, as long as Wyatt did not green-light Diana's project he would be a villain in her eyes despite him being her best friend.

Wyatt rolled his eyes at Cortney's words and asked, "Diana, tell me, how what you just suggested is any different from the orphan grooming camps that circle and other shady organizations open to train killers, assassins, and death soldiers. Don't give me the bullshit that you are not training them to be killers and all because you should know better than anyone that once you manage the orphanage in an organized way then it will lose the meaning you were starting it for."

Diana was one of the many unlucky orphan kids who were recruited and trained by the circle to be their loyal dogs and bite whoever the circle pointed at. She knew better than Cortney, who only joined the circle for her mother, what Wyatt was talking about. Especially, with her planning to recruit the best and brightest orphans into their organization.

Even though Diana's means were different compared to the circle, the end she planned for the orphans was no different from what the circle had in store for her.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 08:23

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

The plan proposed by Diana for the kids in the orphanage was no different from grooming loyal slaves for Fine Gold and its allies. Many would think what's wrong, Diana

was not only giving them a good childhood but also a way to make a living in society. The least these kids could do was give her their loyalty.

As Wyatt pointed out, what the circle and other shady organizations were doing was no different from what Diana did, granted their means were crueler but they were also asking the orphans for their undying loyalty in return for helping them leave the streets, giving them a roof, feeding them, teaching them skills, etc.

"Diana, what you just proposed was not an orphanage but an institution to pump out loyal workers," Wyatt spoke from experience. He also had a similar idea.

Back on Earth, Wyatt had also pondered about this, he even came up with a proposal where the government takes in the orphans, feeds, and educates them. In return, the orphans serve in the army for a decade with pay and all benefits of course. He was young and naive back then. He had suddenly come into a lot of money and he wanted to do something for society. Fortunately, before handing in this proposal, he talked to his army friend, a general, who helped him see the wrong in his plan. Even when he argued, what if they don't join the army and some MNCs? The general stopped him from making what could have become the biggest mistake of his life right after the Viltronian serum debacle.

Listening to the argument Wyatt had put forward, there was a heavy silence within the car. Cindy, Diana, and Cortney were pondering Wyatt's words, trying to find a way to refute them. After all, for them, they felt like the idea was without loopholes. It was hard for them to give up on it. Especially, Cortney who had heard the idea for the first time and got roped into it.

"Sigh!" Diana suddenly sighed and laid back on her seat helplessly. Then, she muttered, "You are right Master Wyatt. What I proposed was no different from what the Circle had in store for me. In the name of helping the kids and giving them a better future, I would end up robbing their freedom. Freedom to choose their future, by making their mistakes and learning from them."

Diana was the first to give up and agreed with Wyatt. Soon Cindy followed, "I had heard excessive good can become evil, today I understood what that phrase was talking about."

As for Cortney, she did not speak but her silence was evidence enough that she too understood what Wyatt was trying to warn them about. Then after a few minutes, she finally broke the silence saying, "I thought I had found my calling. I guess I was just blinded by what the idea promised and did not bother to think of the consequences. Though for a moment, it felt good to know I had an answer to the problem."

Cortney expressed her disappointment but Wyatt understood what she was talking about. At first, when he had also thought of a similar plan he thought he had found a solution to end a part of the world's suffering. That moment felt so empowering, it got

him so hyped up that he believed no drug in the world could ever get him that high. Fortunately, he had friends to help him see the wrongs of his why just like how he helped Cortney, Cindy, and Diana see the wrong in their idea.

"Then, what now?" Cortney asked Diana, as her misleading idea had helped her understand what she wanted to do with her life.

"..." Diana did not have an answer, she could not think of a way where she would not be forcing her will on the kids and also getting good results. It was impossible, they were talking about kids here, for goodness sake. They do not know better. After a lot of contemplation, Diana found it hard to acknowledge it but she had to, that the current system of orphanages though flawed was working. With better management and support it could give more promising results.

Diana hated the fact that after hating the orphanage system for decades, she had to agree that it was a better way to help the kids than what she had thought of. At least it did not rob the kids of their freedom. Granted it could be easily exploited in the wrong hands. Well that's the risk with every thing.

"Don't tell me you are going to give up, just because you met a roadblock. Work your beautiful brain, there must be another way," Cortney pressured Diana to think of a better way to help the orphans in the world. She felt that even though they had made a detour, they were still on to something worth pursuing. She hoped the gang did not give up on exploring this. Instead, they should buckle down and think of a way to make this happen.

"Cortney, I hate to admit it but the current orphanage system despite its flaws is working. I think that with someone as kind-

hearted as you managing and supporting it, the orphanage will give more promising results in the future," Diana responded, cheering for Cortney to do her best to help the orphanage.

"I know that and I will do that without you telling me. What about opening the orphanage in other cities? What about helping the orphans in the Blossom District and then in the entire Southern Region? I have the strength and the money, just guide me. Think of a better solution," Cortney continued to insist that they don't forget their original motivation and continued to think of a way to achieve it without giving up.

"..." Diana did not respond, as her mind was a mess. She was more excited about her orphanage development project than anyone else. Learning that it was the same as what the Circle did to her, she was still trying to process that. Especially with having to agree that the existing orphanage system was working better than she thought.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 08:29

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Cindy looked at Diana's face from the rearview mirror in worry. Because she never expected to hear Diana claim that the current orphanage system was working. She knew what Diana had been through in her childhood better than anyone. She knew that both the system and society had failed Diana time and again. But for Diana to agree that the very system that failed her was working would have been a very hard pill to swallow.

So, she was concerned about Diana. Especially knowing how excited Diana was about this project. She cannot imagine what Diana would be going through learning that she was unknowingly about to commit the exact crime, that the Circle did to her, against the kids she wanted to help. Now something like that can mess with a person's mind.

"Cortney, I know you feel disappointed but lay off her. She is more disappointed than you," Cindy asked Cortney to stop pestering her friend/boss.

"I-I just feel that giving up now would be a waste of a beautiful idea that has brought us all together in this car," Cortney said, implying that it was fate that had brought them together in the car to explore the idea Diana proposed. To work on it and fix it.

"..." Cindy did not know what to say, as she could also understand where Cortney was coming from. Even she felt like her. But the answer was as bright as the sunniest day, only they were too reluctant to see and acknowledge it.

The atmosphere in the SUV was no longer that of a group of friends or business partners heading for breakfast but of a group of colleagues heading for a funeral. Everyone was down in the mood. It was as if disappointment had become the theme of the car ride.

Even the driver of the car, who had the privilege of hearing his boss' genuine care for society felt hopeless about the problem. He was proud that he was working for such people but he felt helpless knowing that even such powerful people were clueless against the problems plaguing the society.

"Arragh!" Cortney screamed in frustration and felt helpless about improving on Diana's idea, she could not think of anything. What was more frustrating was the fact that sometimes she could not help but find herself wondering whether the kids losing a little freedom but growing up as healthy adults who contribute to society and live more than

their average life expectancy was worse than them living and suffering on the streets worrying about their next meal.

But thinking back to her time on the streets and in the orphanage, she wondered if she was given the choice between the street life she was leading and the idea Diana proposed. She would not hesitate to choose Diana's idea. She would rather stay well fed on a clean bed than be always hungry and sleep in the dark alley not knowing if she would live to see the next sunrise.

However, the problem was she was no longer that desperate Cortney. She knew the cost of choosing Diana's idea. If she were given a choice to change her past, honestly she would change nothing about it as her past was part of her, it made her what she was today. She genuinely loved her current self and in peace with her past. Yes, she would have loved to have a normal family growing up but this was her life.

Therefore, Cortney understood that the young her might choose Diana's idea driven by her desperate circumstances but she would grow up to hate or not like how her life turned out and even start to resent the idea Diana proposed and think that she would not wish it on others.

Cortney struggled in her mind, trying her best to think of a way to salvage the idea. And then she finally realized she was stuck, going around in a circle. She kicked Wyatt's seat again in frustration, then she jumped out of her seat and sat on Wyatt's lap. She put him in a choke hold, burying his head on her vulgar cleavage, she yelled, "Bloodette, bind him tight such that he cannot break free."

Red tentacles extended out of Cortney's back, entwining around Wyatt and binding them together. Cortney's plump body pressed against his hard muscles, their closeness palpable in the air. Bloodette followed Cortney's orders diligently, dotting their surroundings with precision.

Wyatt could feel Cortney's nipples pressing against his chest, the warmth of her body seeping into his skin. Her crotch area rubbed against his, igniting a primal response within him. As her voluptuous body squeezed against his, a surge of desire coursed through Wyatt, his manhood reacting instinctively to the intimate contact.

Despite the unusual circumstances of the blood rule tentacles, the skin contact between Cortney and Wyatt was undeniably real. In the midst, Wyatt's body responded to the primal urges that stirred within him simulated by Cortney's vulgar body pressing against him.

For someone who had managed to achieve independence from his mortal body. Destroy his body and reconstruct it with a snap of his fingers, Wyatt was still bound by his physical needs. He did not think that they would show their ugly side now of all times.

Cortney's action shocked Diana and Cindy who were still trying to process the fact that their big project had a huge flaw. They stared at Cortney and Wyatt in astonishment, they did not know how to respond to the situation as they did not have a proper grasp of Wyatt's relationship with Cortney. They thought they were friends but they had lived enough to know the phrase friends with benefits.

"Cortney, have you finally gone mad?" Wyatt yelled, ready to mobilize his strength to break free of the tentacles binding him but then he looked into Cortney's eyes, he saw tears in them and realized what was happening. So he could not bring himself to break free and sat there, waiting for her to speak her mind.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 08:34

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"You broke them. Now, you fix them, Otherwise, be prepared to be stuck to me for the rest of your life," Cortney demanded of Wyatt, locking her teary eyes with his. According to her, though Wyatt did help stop them from making a big mistake, he did not have to be overbearing about it. She believed his dismissive attitude had erased Diana and Cindy's motivation toward their orphanage development project.

With her capabilities, Cortney could ensure that the Sky Blossom City's Orphanage was properly managed and looked after. She believed she was capable of more. However, she needed motivated and great minds like Diana and Cindy on her team to unleash what she was capable of.

Now that Wyatt's words had broken them beyond repair, she blamed him and wanted him to fix them so they could get back on the right track, the track to helping orphans all over the world. All this had gotten her so emotional that she almost cried and resorted to desperate means of blackmailing Wyatt into helping.

Since Wyatt was not on board with Diana's plan from the start, she believed he would not help if she asked, desperate, she decided to blackmail him into helping her. With him being way stronger than her, she could only think of using her body to restrain his freedom believing he would not hurt her after all they were best friends. He would not have risked his life entering the blood rule source just to kill or harm her later.

"Wyatt, what the heck? Why are you making Cortney cry? If she cries, I will cry," Bloodette's head extended out of the blood tentacles binding him and Cortney together.

She then blamed him for making Cortney cry and threatened if Cortney cried she too would start crying.

"Fine, I will help you. Just get off me," Wyatt said, agreeing to Cortney's demands. He did not know about Cortney, but with her vulgar body pressing against his, her crotch rubbing on his, right now his body's hormones were hypnotizing him to have his way with Cortney right then and there.

Wyatt was actually surprised to find that Cortney's expression did not look embarrassed, ashamed, aroused, or a mix of all three of them like him. Currently, his manhood had wakened and was in its full swing. The bulge it had produced in his pants had perfectly wedged in the groove of Cortney's crotch section. Regardless of how dense Cortney was about the contract between men and women, this was an unignorable and undeniable sign that one cannot miss. He wondered how she remained so composed with his manhood pushing against her crotch.

"I will after you fix those two to start with," Cortney said resolutely, showing that this was not up for negotiation. She was not the one to cave mid-way. Now that she had started it she would see it through to the very end.

"Cortney, listen to me, I am not comfortable in this position. Could just release me so we civilly discuss this?" Wyatt said to avoid Cortney's eyes because, for some reason looking into her teary eyes, his manhood would receive a boost of sorts.

"You are comfortable, then get cracking already. The sooner you start to cooperate the sooner I will get off you. Besides there is nothing to discuss, you have to help," Cortney said stubbornly, not allowing Wyatt to avoid her eyes.

"Cortney, listen to me. I am controlling myself over here. There is a limit to everything, if something happens don't blame later," Wyatt warned Cortney. Even though he was the master of his body, as a healthy teenager in his prime with the physique of a mutant viltronian there were still parts of him that were beyond his control. Especially his manhood.

"Wyatt, I warn you. If you value my friendship you are not allowed to use your strength to break the restraints. Do you hear me," Cortney said in panic recalling how strong Wyatt's body was physically.

"No, don't move around. The more you move you are only making it worse," Wyatt pleaded to Cortney as she moved to make herself comfortable on his lap.

Chuckle Listening to suppressed laughter coming from his side, Wyatt turned to look at Diana, trying her best to not laugh aloud. He saw the look in her eyes and knew she knew what he was talking about even though it continued to remain elusive to Cortney's small brain.

Annoyed, Wyatt ordered, "Stop, laughing and talk some sense into her. Get her off of me. Before it's too late."

Just then the car jerked, as the driver yelled at the passing car, "Hey, watch where you are going."

"Shit!" Wyatt uttered as his manhood surpassed its mortal limits and displayed its mutant viltronian glory.

Cortney who was at Wyatt's eye level, suddenly felt something pushing her upwards. Now she was a couple of inches above eye level. Seeing this phenomenon, Diana's eyes widened in shock.

It took a while for Cortney to register what was happening and once she understood she screamed, "Aah, Wyatt you pervert. Get it down. Get it down."

"I think it will be faster if you get off me," Wyatt advised Cortney with an indifferent face. What else could he do? He had warned Cortney repeatedly but she didn't listen. She is lucky his clothes were strong and elastic, designed to handle his transformation skill. If it were regular pants then his manhood would have torn through them and into Cortney's short jeans. Then she would not have been elevated rather— it was better unsaid.

"No, I will not. You get it down, get it down," Cortney continued to persist with her stubbornness.

"Cortney, get off me or stop me moving. Because you are only making it worse," Wyatt would have thrown Cortney off him if he was not worried about showing his manhood at its peak to his employees. Now that would open him to potential workplace sexual harassment cases. He trusted his employees but as their boss, he too needed to maintain their respect for him.

1

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1938 Wyatt's Lucky Woman

[1,099 words]

Chapter 1938 Wyatt's Lucky Woman

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 08:38

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

It was total chaos inside the SUV. Cortney would not listen to reason. Just then Bloodette asked her, "What do you want to do? Tell me, I will help."

Listening to Bloodette, black lines formed on Wyatt's forehead. To his dismay, Cortney replied to her, "Bloodette, you wouldn't understand. Just bind us tighter. Make sure he cannot break free."

"How much tighter do you want to be bound? Your breasts are almost about to pop," Wyatt yelled at Cortney.

"Well, if you don't want to pop then start helping me already," Cortney yelled back at Wyatt. Then, she added, "The sooner you help us the sooner all this stops."

"Okay fine, just stop moving. You are not making it any easier for me," Wyatt caved, deciding to follow Cortney's arrangement. He was going to help them anyway. But he wanted to see who among the three would be the first to figure out the solution he had reached or if one of them was able to suggest something better.

Wyatt was grooming Diana to take over his miscellaneous businesses down in the Blossom district. So he could not keep feeding her the answers and helping her whenever she was in trouble. He needed to give her space to grow. So, that she can better serve Wyatt.

This orphanage development project that Diana came up with fit exactly the teachable moment Wyatt was looking for, it explored all the types of issues. Especially the ethical and moral issues. A person can be overbearing in their actions but they should know the ethical and moral consequences of their actions. If they were to ignore them, then they should be strong enough to withstand the consequences.

Just like how Wyatt did in the case of the landlords who were not willing to sell their land for the orphanage expansion. There was nothing ethical and moral about him forcing them to sell their land and donate the money to the orphanage. But Wyatt was strong enough to withstand any and all possible consequences that would result from his decision and action.

Everything was going perfectly, according to Wyatt's plan. Diana and Cindy were starting to see beyond the regular veil of society and starting to move towards the conclusion he had arrived at back on earth. But Cortney was too impatient and gave in to her intrusive thoughts. Well, it might be her solution to the problem gathering trustworthy people smarter than her to find the solution for something she could not. It

was not how they got an answer but if got the answer. The situation needs a solution it will not care how the solution came into being.

"Eew, I felt it grow," Cortney suddenly yelled while still stubbornly continuing to sit on Wyatt's lap, pressing her vulgar body against his. Regardless of how much was open and confident about her sexuality, Cortney found her current situation very embarrassing and shameful, yet she continued to insist on restraining Wyatt's body with her body because she was not a quitter.

"How many times do I have to tell you to stop moving around, you are only making it worse?" Wyatt responded in annoyance.

"I am balanced on the tip of your rod in a moving car. You tell me how I am supposed to stop moving," Cortney complained that it was not her fault that she was moving.

"Pft!" Diana almost laughed out loud but managed to control herself at the last second.

"That's it, driver park the car, right now!" Wyatt ordered the driver. Who quickly did as the big boss ordered him. Once the driver parked the car by the road, Wyatt yelled, "Everybody out of the car right now."

Soon Vivian, Diana, Cindy, and the driver got out of the car with mixed expressions. Their thoughts were running wild wondering what was Wyatt going to do. Was he finally unable to hold on and prepared to take Cortney inside the car right then and there? Getting out of the car they looked at their boss with Cortney on his lap curiously, wondering if their boss was going to do it. They could not help but get excited. Especially the driver. He thought the rich and powerful really knew how to enjoy life and the full worth of it.

"Cortney, you too. Get out of the car while I am still being polite," Wyatt cautioned Cortney that even his patients had their limit and right now it was bottomed out for him to tolerate her tantrum.

"No, I am—" Cortney rejected Wyatt again without hesitation but before she could finish speaking, Wyatt interrupted her by breaking free of Bloodette's tentacles and throwing Cortney on the streets. Then he closed the car door and pulled up the windows. So that he could get his boner down without his employees noticing his towering manhood.

As the windows of the SUV closed, Cindy and Diana shamelessly took a peep at their Boss's manhood and were shocked by the rod sticking out between his legs. It was not pitching a tent it was piercing the sky like a majestic skyscraper. Seeing this, they both let out an involuntary gasp which was naked by Cortney's scream, "Wyatt, does our friendship mean nothing to you?"

"Cortney, you dare to ask me that after the trouble I went through to find and retrieve you back to the card world? You tell me, does our friendship mean nothing to you?" Wyatt asked Cortney, using her medicine against her.

"..." Cortney was speechless. She really did not know how to answer that since she had just tried to blackmail Wyatt. However, she did not dwell on it instead shamelessly said, "Wyatt, don't forget. You promised to help me."

Wyatt did not respond to her, he focused on getting his manhood to sleep as fast as possible. Because he did not want his employees to think that he was masturbating inside the car with them outside. So quickly getting his thing down, rolling windows down he ordered, "Come in."

Entering the car, Diana looked at him with a mischievous smile and said, "Master, Manager Susan is a lucky woman."

"Diana, what are you saying? I have nothing against Manager Susan, but Her Highness, the Southern Emperor, is clearly the lucky woman," Cindy said, showing that she was rooting for Anna over Susan.

"You guys," Wyatt uttered in disbelief, pondering how the women around him were all so bold.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 08:43

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"..." Cortney was mum when Diana and Cindy teased Wyatt about this boner. As someone who had felt it rubbing against her crotch she did not think Wyatt's thing was a teasing matter, it was very serious—ly hard.

Shaking her head, Cortney awakened from her recollection of the feelings of Wyatt's manhood pressed against her crotch, and demanded, "Please stop talking about irrelevant things. We have something important to discuss. Wyatt, you said you would help. Now help."

Listening to Cortney, Wyatt looked at Cindy and Diana before saying, "They don't need my help. They have already figured out how to improve their orphanage development program."

"We did?" Cindy and Diana asked simultaneously in disbelief. Then, they looked at each other in confusion, because they did not understand what Wyatt was talking about as they had not figured out how to improve their orphanage development program. From the looks of it, the other also seemed to be clueless about what Wyatt was talking about.

"They did?" Cortney exclaimed glaring at Cindy and Diana. She blamed them for not sharing the solution, they thought of, with her. If they had said they already knew how to improve the orphanage development problem, then she would not have stuck to Wyatt while he took full advantage of her body. Honestly, it wasn't all that bad. Though shameful, she took full advantage of Wyatt. Cortney could not help but feel a bit proud of her action, and thought, 'It was worth it. His body is too perfect. Especially his body's scent. It is intoxicating.'

Sniff then she subtly sniffed Wyatt from behind, both Bloodette and Vivian looked at her in shock. Cortney squeezed out an awkward smile and looked away.

"Master Wyatt, what are you talking about? We are at our wit's end. Honestly, I am even thinking of giving up on this idea and just sticking to donating money to orphanages like we used to do in the past," Diana responded, she indeed felt that way.

"I too feel the same way," Cindy replied, agreeing with Diana.

"What? I don't believe it. You guys don't really feel that way, right? It is just Wyatt's rude words that have gotten you guys down on your motivation. Let us brainstorm, I am sure you guys will be motivated once again," Cortney was shocked to hear Cindy and Diana say they would rather stick to donating money than try to improve the current orphanage system.

"..." Both Diana and Cindy avoided responding to Cortney. Because they knew how they felt about the situation and it was terrible.

"See, what you have done, Wyatt? Fix them already or I will stick to you for the rest of your life," Cortney kicked Wyatt's seat from behind and threatened him.

Diana and Cindy were so motivated about the orphanage development project, that even she who preferred to ride on her hoverbike, chose to sit in the back of a car just to listen to them and hear their big plans. However, then Wyatt happened. With a few words, he sucked the motivation right out of them. He was like a motivation-sucking vampire with a great body—

Slap *Slap*

"Cortney, concentrate!" Cortney, all of sudden, without any warning, slapped her cheeks mercilessly. Shocking Diana and Cindy the most. As they believe she was doing that for

them. However, they still did not dare to meet eyes with her. Because they really were planning to stick to donating money rather than trying to improve the orphanage system.

"Wyatt, look what you are doing to our Cortney," Bloodette yelled at Wyatt, blaming him for Cortney's odd behavior.

"What the heck did I do to her? She was born that way, psycho," Wyatt yelled back, he was freaking annoyed by Cortney kicking the back of his seat every time she felt like it. It took a lot of restraint on his part not to throw her out of the car. And now this. Wyatt did not want to think this about a friend but, 'This bitch is a freaking psycho.' He even felt he would prefer Corey over Cortney.

"What did you do to her? She keeps staring at you with drool dripping off her mouth, she keeps sniffing your scent, and now she is slapping herself because—"

"Bloodette shut up," awakening from her astonished state, Cortney closed Bloodette's mouth trying to stop her from revealing her secret to Wyatt of all people but Bloodette's body was made of blood—she could make any number of mouths. Seeing Bloodette form another mouth to continue, Cortney pleaded with her, "Bloodette, I am begging you, please shut up."

Blacklines formed on Wyatt's forehead listening to Bloodette, he was not surprised by her revelation. With his acute senses, how could he miss Cortney's actions behind him. Especially when she almost brought her face next to his seat and sniffed his body scent. He ignored them all because he had enough drama for one day but who would have thought that Cortney would have a pig teammate like Bloodette, who aired her dirty laundry for all to see.

"Oh my, our little Cortney is growing up I see," Diana said, teasing Cortney. She and Cortney had gotten close on the project to rebuild and expand the city's orphanage.

"Cortney, you liked what you felt," Cindy chimed in, hoping to change the topic. She really did not want to talk about the orphanage development project because if they continued on that topic she would not come out in good light.

"..." Cortney's face was beet red out of embarrassment. She was not this ashamed when Wyatt's manhood was poking her privates with them watching. Back then she was in the right, she was doing it for something she believed in. But right now her actions were akin to a nymphomaniac. She never felt like that before. However, today she did not know why— was Wyatt a special case? She wondered.

"So, you guys know what is happening to her?" Bloodette asked Diana and Cindy in concern for her only friend.

"Yes, she is just horny. A little vitamin D should fix her right up." Cindy answered.

"Where do I find that?"

"Master Wyatt has it—"

"Cindy, you are pushing your luck," Wyatt warned Cindy. He did not mind her teasing Cortney but she shouldn't drag him in it.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,048 words]

Chapter 1940 Parents

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 08:47

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"I am sorry, Master Wyatt," Cindy hurriedly apologized, realizing that in the heat of the moment, she had taken it too far. She was used to taking liberties with Diana but Wyatt was clearly not Diana. Hopefully, he would forgive her with an apology.

"See to it that it doesn't happen again," Wyatt did not want to be tight ass around his employees but he also did not want to be taken lightly or lose their respect. This was a very thin line to walk on.

The atmosphere in the SUV had turned awkward. However, it was perfect for Cortney to calm herself and focus on the matter at hand. As for Bloodette, she got locked in Cortney's innate rune just when she was about to ask Wyatt to give Cortney his vitamin D. Cortney hates locking Bloodette in her innate rune but times like this call for it.

Taking control of her mind and body, she said, "So, as I was saying. Wyatt, please help us. We are stuck."

"I have been trying to help you from the start," Wyatt retorted.

"Just give us the answer stop trying to make it some complicated teachable moment," Cortney snapped back at Wyatt. She went out of her way to properly ask him for his help but he continued with his self-enlightenment bullshit.

"..." Wyatt really wanted to wack Cortney on her forehead but considering the rage he had built up, if he were unable to control his energy he might end up blowing her head.

Calming himself, Wyatt looked at Diana and Cindy and said, "The reason you guys are feeling terrible is because you have already understood that the orphans are missing parents, not money or opportunities. A kid from a poor household can become a world leader or billionaire while a kid from a rich household can become a criminal or beggar.

No amount of money and opportunity will guarantee the future of the kids. Since they lack the most fundamental thing, parents.

By parents, I do not mean the ones that gave birth to them and abandoned them. I mean guardians who will care for them, patiently explain good from bad, a role model to show them how to live life, such things."

Listening to Wyatt say those words, both Diana and Cindy froze. What Wyatt had said was exactly the conclusion they had reached long ago but they still ignored this fact and continued on their quest to improve the orphanage system.

Both of them had long realized that the current orphanage was not able to give optimal results not because it was lacking proper resources or management, but people who would give a damn about those orphan kids. People who will teach them good from bad. Someone to teach them their hunger does not give them the right to steal from others but at the same time how not to let pain and fear hold them back.

An orphanage could manage without enough resources and money but it would not manage without a proper adult looking after the kids. The current orphanage system lacked people who would genuinely care about the kids and guide them without any malice.

That meant the orphanage did not need Cindy and Diana's money or resources, the orphanage needed them. The orphanage needed Cindy and Diana, people who would care for kids and guide them without any discrimination or hate. People who will be patient with kids. People who would be forgiving and give the kids another chance, just like how a loving parent would.

Having realized this Diana and Cindy knew why the orphanage system was the same when the world kept developing. They understood why no one tried to change it.

Because nobody, even those who wanted to help, was not ready to give up their life for the orphaned kids' lives. Only a parent could do that. No matter how much sympathy they had for these kids, they could not bring themselves to abandon their dreams and goals just to live solely for the orphaned kids. Only a parent could do that.

Because Diana and Cindy had realized this, they felt terrible. More importantly, they both were orphans. They knew what these orphan kids were going through yet they could not bring themselves to abandon everything and live solely for the orphaned kids.

This was why they said that they were considering giving up on improving the orphanage system and sticking to their old method, donating money and resources.

It became clear to Wyatt that Diana and Cindy had realized this when they persuaded Cortney to forget about improving the orphanage system and just try to properly manage the city's orphanage. They did not know if Cortney was ready to give up on her life and just live for the orphaned kids but they hoped focusing on managing the city's orphanage would help her get there sooner and help decide what was best for her.

Cortney was young, she had not experienced life enough like them. She was still naive and ignorant, one day she too will also realize what they had realized, and then a time will come when she will have to face the cruel reality of making the choice. Just like how they chose what's best for them, they hoped Cortney too would choose what's best for her and not based on what's best for the orphan kids because then she would not be doing the kids any favor. Worse comes to worse she might even end up resenting them for it.

"What the fuck are you saying? I had a mother for a few months and believe me, she was no help. At first, I cozied up to her for her money but then instead of using that opportunity to form an actual and real mother-and-daughter bond with me, she used her money to control me. If not for my plan to give her money to the orphanage I would not have succumbed to her tricks," Cortney strongly disagreed with Wyatt.

"Cortney, forget your mother. There must have been some adult figure in your life that had left a strong impression on you."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1941 Cortney's Impossible Demand

[1,009 words]

Chapter 1941 Cortney's Impossible Demand

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 08:51

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

The Circle had messed up Clown Mask's life in ways unimaginable to many. Clown Mask had not only seen what the Circle was going to do to her in her future vision but had to live all again since she was powerless.

It was like your killer showing you the video of them torturing you and killing you before proceeding to do exactly that in that exact order. You know what is going to happen but you can only helplessly let it happen. That kind of despair takes a huge toll on one's mind.

One such thing in Clown Mask's life was Cortney herself. Clown Mask knew of Cortney's birth from her future vision, she struggled for years before deciding to let it happen, to give birth to Cortney, despite knowing that she could not be there for her during her childhood and that just like her Cortney too would become a pawn of the Circle.

But not if she can help it, the moment she decided to give birth to Cortney was when Clown Mask no longer planned to escape the Circle and go into hiding but to fight it from within. Weaken the Supreme leader slowly by destroying his fortune which made him a god-like being in her future vision. The taintless physique of Chief Denise's daughter, Wyatt's soul pupils, and many more.

Clown Mask's life was super messed up, she had her issues. But one thing was sure she would do anything for Cortney. She believed having willingly abandoned Cortney she had lost the right to be a mother to Cortney. So, she never tried to be a mother to Cortney. Instead, she became her master and demanded Cortney to call her as such, teaching her and training her to survive the cruel world.

Regardless of what Cortney thought of her mother, Clown Mask did her best to make the world a better place, but no one was aware of or acknowledged her actions. The Southern royal family, who knew everything, never praised her for sacrifice but chose to lock her up. Even Wyatt who knew everything silently watched as it happened. Back then he was still insignificant but now things have changed.

"..." Diana's feelings were complicated listening to Cortney recount her time with her mother. She hated Cortney for being the child of the person who tortured her most in her life, her master Clown Mask. She envied Cortney for having a mother.

Diana soon learned that Cortney was being trained to be her replacement, after she had betrayed decided to distance herself from the Circle and subtly rebel against them. Diana could not believe Clown Mask would be so cruel to her flesh and blood, her only daughter. She began to pity Cortney. She no longer envied her for having a mother.

Then during the rebuilding of the city's orphanage, she had come to know of Cortney not just as a file her subordinates complied for her but as a person, a fellow being. All her complex feelings towards Cortney resolved and then she began to see Cortney as

her sibling similar to how she saw Jaya. This was mostly because they both had similar tragedies in their life the Circle and Clown Mask.

"What do you mean?" Cortney asked Wyatt in confusion not understanding what he was asking her.

"I mean when you were little before you grew up and became strong. If you faced a problem who would go to? There must have been an adult that you felt comfortable around, sharing your worries and secrets with them," Wyatt elaborated in a way that Cortney could grasp what he was asking her.

"Umm, let me think. Most adults who approached me or I approached either tried to sell me, molest me, or take advantage of me. But I understand what you are saying.

There was this old whore from the Redlight district that saved me and brought me to the orphanage.

Then there is the orphanage headmaster. She was the kindest person I know. Growing up, she would never get angry with me or lose patience with me. Even now she treats me like one of her kids— Oh, now I get what you meant.

The way to improve the orphanage system was to find more people like the orphanage headmaster. If there was more of her then she could take care of more kids.

Holy shit, the answer was right in front of me. How come I never saw it until now? Wyatt, you are a freaking genius. Now think of a way to find more people like the headmaster," Cortney was excited, finally understanding what Wyatt was getting at.

Cortney could not believe that the answer to improving the orphanage system was so simple. Once again Cortney was motivated and hyped. Going as far as to ask Wyatt to do the impossible, to find selfless, patient, and good-hearted people like her orphanage's headmaster.

"Cortney that is not possible—," Diana spoke seeing that Cortney did not understand fully what she was asking Wyatt to do. But before she could explain it to her, she was interrupted by a furious Cortney, "Why not?"

Cortney was angry with Diana and Cindy for saying that they would stick to donating money when they knew that the answer to improving the orphanage system was finding more people like the current headmaster of the city's orphanage. But then thinking of something, she gently knocked herself and the head said, "Sorry, I got ahead of myself. Wyatt has never met the headmaster so it will be hard for him to think of a way to find more people like her."

"Girl, are you hearing yourself?" Cindy asked Cortney in disbelief. She knew Cortney was air-head but this was just too much. That was considering that as an orphan,

Cortney should know better than anyone that people like the orphanage headmaster were very rare. Almost non-existent.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 08:54

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"Cortney, how many kind people like your headmaster have you met in your entire life?" Diana asked, understanding that Cortney only understood things in their basic form. She could not understand, how someone so dumb managed to survive so far. Especially, with her Tao Tongue physique. Was the world looking out for her?

Wyatt did not know if the world was looking out for Cortney but he knew Clown Mask had been looking out for Cortney. The old hooker that saved Cortney and brought her to the city's orphanage was Clown Mask. Not only that, Clown Mask very discreetly helped the orphanage. With the Circle monitoring her, she could not make it too obvious, hence its struggling state. Still only with her secret protection did the current headmaster and her ideologies manage to survive in this city when Circle was ruling it.

Having recalled this from Clown Mask's memories, Wyatt had gone silent. Wondering if he should tell Cortney the truth. Then he decided against it mostly because it was not his place and he wanted Cortney to hear it all from her mother's mouth. Wyatt believed he had enough leverage to get the Southern royal family to release Clown Mask especially since the current timeline had deviated very from the Clown Mask's future vision.

"None," Cortney answered Diana without thinking. Diana waited thinking, Cortney would realize what she was hinting to her, but that moment did not come so she said, "So you see Cortney, people like your headmaster are very rare, making what you are asking Wyatt to do almost impossible. Don't you think so?"

"No, I don't. All my life I have only been in this city and I have yet to meet and get to know everyone in this city. Even if the headmaster is one of a kind in our city. Each should have at least one person like her. All Wyatt has to do is figure out a way to find that person and then we help that person to the best of our abilities. Ain't that simple?" Diana's words did not demotivate Cortney instead they made her more enthusiastic.

Listening to Cortney, both Diana and Cindy shook their heads thinking Cortney was too optimistic to think that every city would at least have a single person similar to the

current orphanage headmaster. Back in when they were in the orphanage, the headmaster then was in cahoots with the circle and had no qualms about selling children to brothels or demonic card apprentices.

They could not help but wonder what happened to that headmaster. Unlike the current headmaster who was a mortal, that one was a strong demonic card apprentice herself. She sacrificed significant infants to her card to maintain her young apprentice, beauty, and charm. Well, Clown Mask took care of her. She subtly got rid of the old orphanage headmaster without alerting Cirlice and replaced her with the current headmaster. Believing that she would be the perfect guardian for Cortney. Even though Clown Mask had abandoned Cortney, she regularly checked on her and silently helped her from the shadows.

Figuring out an action plan to find more people like her headmaster, Cortney felt she had done half of the job for Wyatt, now all Wyatt had to do was find a way to implement it and make sure it gave the promised result. For someone who was called the Hope of the South, Cortney believed this should be a simple task not worth mentioning. Excited, she grabbed Wyatt's shoulders from behind and shaking him vigorously, she said, "Come on, genius, show us what you got. I have shown you the way all you have to do is make it possible. I believe in you."

"Cortney, stop feeling my arms," Wyatt said and then turning to Diana he said, "Who do I complain about sexual harassment?"

"Wyatt, man up. All I did was pat your shoulders to motivate you. Besides you did not stop me," Cortney aggressively dismissed Wyatt's calm by victim-blaming.

Yes, Cortney excitedly grabbed Wyatt's shoulders and shocked them at first but then feeling his well-defined muscles, her arms slowly descended to the back of his upper arms and she began to feel his triceps. Wyatt even felt her sensually squeezing them. The only other person to make him so cautious was Anna, now that was locked up training, he did not want Cortney to fill the gap. He needs to nip this in the bud.

"She is not a Fine Gold employee so I cannot be of help to you boss. But you can try the local authorities but good luck proving that she sexually harassed you," Diana said helplessly, but her eyes stayed glued to Cortney's hands that were still feeling up her boss's triceps. She could not believe that Cortney was so bold and had the galls to defend herself by victim-

blaming while continuing the act she was blamed for. Her actions led Diana to wonder if Cortney was in heat.

"Let go of my arms already," Wyatt shook his shoulders in annoyance. He could not believe Cortney would be so shameless. Well, it was not a surprise considering how open she was about her dress and sexuality.

"Boss, I have a better, faster, and hassle-free idea. Tell this to Her Highness Southern Emperor or Manager Susan, they will take care of her," Cindy suddenly proposed. Diana agreed it was a good idea to let the lionesses protect their meat.

Ahem Cortney cleared her throat to gather everyone's attention. "Guys, I was just joking with Wyatt. Who knew he could not take a joke? Tsk," Cortney said condescendingly. Then, she continued saying, "Besides, aren't we losing sight of the important matter here? Wyatt, now the ball is in your court. You have to find kind people like the Headmaster to govern the orphanages we open in other cities. Something like this should be simple for you right?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 08:59

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Cortney eagerly waited for Wyatt's reply, even Diana and Cindy, who knew finding kind people willing to sacrifice themselves for others was harder than finding pearls in the ocean, could not help but perk their ears in anticipation.

They hoped that Wyatt had an answer to this, just like the numerous miracles he had created. However, they would not be disappointed if even Wyatt did not have a solution. After all, kindness was subjective. Finding people based on that would be impossible. Because something kind to someone can be cruel to someone else.

Not to mention, Diana and Cindy felt, it would be unfair of them to expect someone to do what they would not do. After all, what they were asking was not something simple, but to sacrifice their dream, goal, and life. Unlike them Cortney felt differently, she felt there were people out there waiting to do good. She wanted to find them, give them the opportunity they waited for, and enable them to do their best.

Wyatt, on the other hand, did not even bother to grace Cortney's demand with a rejection. Not that he could not do what Cortney was asking but because he could do what she was asking.

With the VR universe on the rise, a simple algorithm could easily sort out its players based on their activities in the VR universe. In a realistic universe simulation like the VR universe, it would be hard for genuinely kind people to go against their nature.

Cortney was not wrong about wanting to find kind people to run orphanages, it was just like a nation trying to find brave people willing to fight for their nation, but that would open up another ethical conundrum. The kind Wyatt hated the most, manipulating people by playing with their emotions. Not to mention the people Cortney was searching for were genuinely kind ones.

Wyatt did not like the idea of asking someone to give their life, dreams, and goals for his selfishness to improve the orphanage system. If he genuinely wanted to help orphaned kids, he should step up make the necessary sacrifice and help. Not finding people who he knew would do the sacrifice and do what he wanted to do. It was just plain emotional manipulation.

The same went for Cortney if she wanted to improve the orphanage she should step up and not be trying to find people who would not hesitate to step up. Such good people had their own destinies, whatever they ended up choosing they would achieve great things or greatly impact others' lives. Wyatt believed they would help the world in their own ways, disturbing their lives for the peace of his heart would be very selfish even if it was for the greater good. Especially when he had other ways to achieve similar results.

It wasn't just the orphanage that needed kind people, other places needed kind people to lead as an example and leave a strong impression on their fellow beings. Inspiring the future generation.

Imagine a loving mother of three, who happened to lose one of her kids to traffickers, just when she was heartbroken she was offered a chance to manage an orphanage by Cortney because she knew that mother was kind. What would happen then? Influenced by her trauma and Cortney's words, the mother would willingly take charge of the orphanage and would dedicate her life to it. Was it a romantic ending to a tragic story or a selfish manipulation that separated a loving mother from her two children? This right here, was what Wyatt felt was an example of people trying to play god in others' life.

Cortney waited for Wyatt's answer but it never came, growing impatient, she asked, "Wyatt, I am waiting for your answer, can you do it?"

"~Sigh, Cortney, let me ask you did the headmaster ever ask you what your dreams and goals were or how you wanted to lead your life?" Wyatt did not reply to Cortney instead decided to help her understand the consequences of what she was asking him to do.

"Yes, she does. She keeps bugging me about it every time I go to the orphanage. Why do you ask?" Cortney answered causally. However, she had a grin on her face as this time around if the headmaster were to ask her the same, she had an answer.

"Cortney, have you ever asked the headmaster what her dream and goals were? How she wanted to lead her life?" Wyatt asked.

Cortney was 17 years old, she was not as smart as Wyatt when he was seventeen but emotionally she was more mature than Wyatt when he was 17 years old. Heck, just a few hours ago she even lectured him about what she thought was friendship. Which was why Wyatt did not get impatient with her. Instead, he believed with proper guidance she could blossom into a brilliant flower.

"No, it never crossed my mind to ask her that until now. I will ask her that today," Cortney said with a serious voice. Just now she realized, she did not know the headmaster as well as she thought. Because if she did then she would know what her headmaster's dreams and goals were.

"Please, do," Wyatt nodded and then asked, "Cortney, just because they are kind people, does it seem good to you to ask them to give up their dreams and goals and live their lives taking care of the orphaned kids? I am not saying they will not be willing to do so, I am asking you if you feel it's fair?"

Cortney wanted to retort but then she could not think of a good reason to use as a retort. Then after contemplating for a while, she said, "Someone has to step up. If even the good people remain silent and look the other way then what will happen to the world?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:03

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

'All it takes for evil to win is for good people to do nothing'

Cortney's words dug up this quote from Wyatt's memory. Causing him to turn and look at Cortney and ask, "Where did you hear that?"

"Hear what?" Cortney asked, rubbing the corner of her teary eyes trying to hide her tears. With her emotional maturity, she had already understood what Wyatt was getting at. All of a sudden she felt for the orphanage headmaster. She wanted to know what the orphanage headmaster's true dreams and goals were. If it was not too late to fulfill them, she wanted to help her fulfill them.

"Those words that you just spoke, did you come up with them yourself?" Wyatt asked Cortney, ignoring the tears in her eyes. Knowing this topic was a very sensitive topic for Cortney, Diana, and Cindy.

"Why do you have a problem with that? If good people like you guys and I do not do everything in our power to be the change in the world what will happen to the world? Answer me, damn it. Don't tell me you expect the bad people to bring the change you expect to see in the world?" Cortney yelled furiously. She was disappointed in Wyatt, Diana, and Cindy. These guys had the power, wealth, and awareness, but they did not want to do anything because they put their dreams and goals above all else. Suddenly Cortney felt very lonely in a very cold world.

'...' Diana and Cindy clenched their fists and bit hard on their lips, drawing blood. They were already feeling worse because of their choices. Hearing Cortney call out to them for their choice when they knew better, they felt even worse. Right now, they have the lowest opinion of themselves. However, they continued to choose their dreams and goals. This was their ambition, they could not allow a fleeting moment of guilt to stop them. They were willing to carry this regret, as a reminder.

"Yes, exactly that. Though, I feel the characterization of people as good and bad is naive. But if it helps you understand the world better then it doesn't matter," Wyatt responded, shocking not only Cortney but Diana and Cindy.

"What? Wyatt, this is not a matter of joke. I can understand if you do not want to participate but don't make fun of it," Cortney sternly warned Wyatt. Now that she had decided to live her life for the greater good of the orphaned kids around the world. She won't rest until she has achieved it or die trying. Therefore, she would not allow anyone to mock her resolve, even if that person was her best friend.

"Do you see me laughing?" Wyatt asked summoning the most serious expression he could conjure.

"Wyatt, when people like you, Diana, and Cindy are not willing to give up on your dreams and goals and live for the orphaned kids then how can you expect people who are willing to murder and loot to dedicate their lives for some orphaned kids," Cortney asked Wyatt while glaring at him with threatening eyes. If he did not give her a proper explanation she was planning to beat him up.

"Why Cortney, don't you think every person deserves a second chance?" Wyatt asked Cortney with a gentle smile. As if he believed that even people who committed heinous crimes and murdered innocent people deserved a second chance.

"What the fuck are you getting at?" Cortney asked Wyatt with a frown, feeling that Wyatt was baiting her.

'...' Even Cindy and Diana looked at Wyatt curiously and wondered, Wyatt didn't seriously believe that criminals of all people would be willing to dedicate their entire lives to nurturing and guiding orphan kids. Because they, themselves, were the criminals that Wyatt spoke about. Yes, they only walked in the gray area but they were dangerously close to the black area. They felt that there was no way in the world, that criminals of all

people would sacrifice their ambition to dedicate their remainder of lives for orphaned kids.

"Nothing, I genuinely think that everyone deserves a second chance. Therefore, I am thinking of talking to the Southern Royal family and starting a Rehabilitation and Reintegration program for willing criminals. Especially those sentenced to for life or the death penalty. I think if given the option these people will be willing to redeem themselves by dedicating their lives to nurture and guide the orphaned kids," Wyatt answered, going into details about how he wanted to improve the current orphanage system.

Listening to Wyatt, Cortney was fuming, ready to explode but even before she could speak, Cindy asked Wyatt wanting to confirm if she heard him right, "Boss, don't tell me you really believe that. I know I am not the one to say this as you gave us a second chance to turn our lives around but the people you are talking about are not like us. Yes, we also participate in crimes but we never knowingly hurt innocent and regular people."

Diana nodded agreeing with Cindy and added, "Master, trust me those who are sentenced to life or with the death penalty, are not like us they are a totally different breed of criminals. Most of them even used to be demonic card apprentice. They will tell and do anything to save their life, they cannot be rehabilitated."

"Diana, Cindy, you guys need to have a more open mind. Life is beautiful, sometimes it will surprise you," Wyatt spouted bullshit, pondering on how to convince the Southern Royal family to green-light his criminal rehabilitation and reintegration program.

"That's it, let my fist show you how beautiful life is," Cortney jumped on Wyatt from behind ready to beat him up, but she felt a force binding her to her seat. Then she yelled at Wyatt, "You asshole, I knew it, you were not serious. How dare you mock my idea. Unhand me you jerk, I will not rest until I make you apologize."

'Wyatt, don't tell me you really believe the bullshit you just spouted,' the Field Marshal's voice sounded in Wyatt's mind asking if he was being serious. She had been eavesdropping on him since the beginning. That was an unavoidable part of her job as his bodyguard.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:07

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

As someone who fought most of her life for the southern region, the discussion that Diana started, Cindy supported, debated by Wyatt, and carried on by Cortney was like a song to her ears, even if the topic of debate and their approach to it was a bit naive. Seeing that the future generation of the Southern region was willingly trying to find ways to contribute to society, how could she not be happy? The Field Marshal felt like a farmer watching her crops grow bountifully. Even though she knew this debate between kids might not lead to a change, it was the thought that counted. It was better than them debating how to rob a bank or something.

However, when Wyatt proposed to use criminals sentenced to the death penalty to manage orphanages, spouting stuff like criminal rehabilitation and reintegration programs, the Field Marshal lost it. She could not believe someone of Wyatt's caliber would propose something like that. She wondered how he could think that people who would not hesitate to sacrifice toddlers to gain power could be rehabilitated and be fit to run an orphanage.

Worried that Wyatt would cook up some weird idea and insist on seeing it through, the Field Marshal decided to speak up and guide the hope of the southern region toward the right path. Only she would never guessed his response.

'Your Highness, how can you be so closed-minded? The human heart is so beautiful. With proper care and affection, we can guide tainted hearts to salvation. These criminals might have committed heinous crimes in the past, but with timely guidance through proper means, they will not only change but redeem themselves in the eyes of the world,' Wyatt preached the Field Marshal, leaving her speechless. Taking a second to process his words, she stuttered, 'T-they are beyond help. The sooner you understand this, the better for everyone. It was hard for us to build your image as the hope of the southern region. Don't go ruining it.'

'I knew it. It was you guys. Otherwise, how could the general populous go from calling me a fraud to their hope in a night?' Wyatt immediately called out.

'Hey, we just told them the truth. It is not our fault that the citizen decided to consider you as the hope of the South,' The Field Marshal hurriedly defended and tried to change the topic by saying, 'It seems you have become very proficient in borrowing the World's celestial force. Good job, entering one with the world state both physically and spiritually with ease, it shows that you will become a very strong demigod if you manage to stay alive till you reach that realm.'

The Field Marshal misunderstood that Wyatt was borrowing celestial force from the world to bind Cortney to her seat. This misunderstanding stemmed from another misunderstanding that Wyatt's ability to exist in both planes simultaneously as him entering one with the world state both physically and spiritually. The only reason the Field Marshal could notice Wyatt existed in both planes was because of her unique eyes, which to her eyes looked very much like entering one with the world state both physically and spiritually.

The reason for this misunderstanding was the Field Marshal's knowledge and experience being mostly limited to Card World. She had never come across a being other than celestial bodies that could wield celestial power or exist in both planes simultaneously, therefore she tried to explain the abnormalities in Wyatt with her limited knowledge leading to the misunderstanding.

Wyatt rolled his eyes at the Field Marshal's attempt at changing the topic. He was not bothered by the Field Marshal's misunderstanding as long as she didn't bother him with it.

However, Cortney would not let it go, she screamed at him, "Wyatt, you asshole. For someone so smart how can you be so dumb? Bloodette start practicing, we'll grow stronger than this jerk and beat some commonsense into him."

"Okay, right away," Bloodette agreed without any hesitation. If it was some other time she would not have agreed but right now Cortney was angry she did not want to further enrage her by refusing her.

"Cortney, will you still think that I am dumb if I were to tell you I am planning to make your mother in charge of the criminal rehabilitation and reintegration programs," Wyatt said, detonating a bomb in Cortney, Cindy, and Diana's mind. All three of them had their experience with Clown Mask some more than others but they all were clear on how cruel and merciless Clown Mask was. Neither believed she deserved a second chance.

"Either you are the dumbest person in the world or you are just doing this to hurt me. Since the entire world believes you are a genius, I take it you are doing this to get back at me," Cortney said grudgingly, she had lived with her mother, trained under her, so she knew better than anyone that her mother did not deserve a second chance even if she was currently redeeming herself by cooperating with the Southern Royal family. But then shaking her head, Cortney asked Wyatt, "That woman killed your parents in cold blood, how can you of all people be willing to give her a second chance?"

"My point exactly. That should tell you how much I believe that everyone deserves a second chance and that my criminal rehabilitation and reintegration programs will work," Wyatt said trying to sound as sincere as possible.

Only by acting in such a way could Wyatt continue to sell the world his facade to enlist powerful criminals as his calamity daughter gems. This narrative was his selling point to the world of why he was enlisting the worst of the worst criminals into his ranks. Clown Mask, who had killed Papa and Mama Wyatt, was the perfect face to sell his narrative. If he could forgive someone who killed his parents, he should truly believe what he preached, that's what the world would think and never stop to doubt his motive to recruit the worst criminals the Card World had seen.

'Forget, the criminals. You are beyond help,' the Field Marshal sighed, having listened to Wyatt's words.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:11

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

'All it takes for evil to win is for good people to do nothing.' These were some wise words, they fit the Earth but Wyatt believed that they would not fit the Card world. Rather these words would fit the Card World well instead, 'All it takes for good to triumph over evil is to get the bad people to do good deeds.'

Back on Earth, this would not be possible but here on the Card World, with Wyatt's calamity soul gem, it was not only possible, but Wyatt was willing to do it. Since the criminals here were not mostly driven by their unfortunate circumstances but by their hunger for power. Wyatt would not have any problem targeting people willing to forsake their humanity to quench their thirst for power.

Wyatt would be lying if he did not have another agenda to recruit the criminals in the ranks of the calamity daughter gems. With Gideon Grim helping Belphegor prepare an army of hypnotized Card apprentices, Wyatt believed it was time for him to create his army. His first choice as the target was the worst criminals across the card world. These people were not only strong, but they were a variable that needed to be dealt with before the second demon invasion if it were to happen.

So if Wyatt were to build an army of Calamity daughter gems using the worst criminals, not only would he be gaining strong pawns but he would be ridding the world of a variable and as a bonus, he can give Cortney the selfless people she was searching for to manage the orphanage that she was planning to open across various regions. They were not kind but they did what they were told without any hidden agenda besides they all had hive AI that they could use to properly manage the orphanage and guide the kids. Wyatt had long thought about building his army but until today he could not think of a fitting reason to act on it.

Wyatt needed a fitting reason to recruit criminals for two reasons,

- i) The world leaders would not sit by as he built an army, let alone the Southern Royal family.
- ii) Wyatt was gathering criminals under his banner, even if the world were to be okay with him assembling his army, they would not sit by if most of them were the most

heinous demonic card apprentice the world has seen especially with his questionable association with Dark Realm.

Thanks to Diana, Cindy, and Cortney, Wyatt found a perfect reason to assemble his puppet army of heinous criminals. Once he realized this, Wyatt led the conversation to get conclusion that would help with his agenda. Especially with Field Marshal eavesdropping on their conversation, he had managed to beautifully set the stage to create this army under the disguise of the criminal rehabilitation and reintegration program.

...

Listening to Wyatt say he was willing to forgive the murder of his parents and give her a second chance, Diana and Cindy who were preparing to persuade him to change his mind gave up. Hearing him put it that way, they strongly felt they were in no place to tell Wyatt not to give other criminals a second chance. After all, Wyatt had given them a second chance.

Only someone who truly saw good in people could be willing to give people like them a second chance. Diana and Cindy looked at Wyatt in a new light, they no longer just admired Wyatt for his capabilities, prowess, and achievements but they started to worship him for his qualities.

Diana and Cindy no longer planned to persuade Wyatt against his plan to rehabilitate and reintegrate criminals into society but they wanted to help him with everything they had so he could succeed. They did not feel this way when Cortney called on them to help her with the orphanage issue but for some reason even without Wyatt asking them for their help, they had already resolved to do their best to help him.

...

As for the Field Marshal, she was shocked to hear Wyatt was not only willing to forgive Clown Mask but also give her a second chance. However, knowing the truth of Clown Mask's life she could not deny the fact that Clown Mask deserved a second chance. This suddenly made her scared, she finally understood why her father used to say that foolishness was infectious.

The Field Marshal could not believe that she almost started to believe in Wyatt's foolish idea of giving the heinous criminals who sold their humanity for power a second chance. Without their humanity they were no longer humans, they were no different from the monsters and demons, these people did not deserve a second chance they deserved death. This was why she said the following harsh words to Wyatt, 'Forget the criminals, you are beyond help.'

'Your Highness, I have decided. I hope you can help me inform the Southern Princess that I wanted Clown Mask released in my custody. Now that you guys have already

copied her memories, I do not believe you imprisoning her after everything she sacrificed and did for the Card world would be fair,' Wyatt informed the Field Marshal. The Southern Royal family has been preparing for his meeting with Anna's mother for weeks now, but Wyatt would not let them have their way, he threw a bomb in their court with his criminal rehabilitation and reintegration program.

'Wyatt, have you gone insane? We will do nothing of that sort,' the Field Marshal declared with an authoritative tone.

'Your Highness, forgive me for my rudeness, but that is not for you to decide. Just pass my message to Her Highness the Southern Princess. I do not want her to be caught off guard when I bring this topic up during our meeting,' Wyatt replied politely. The Field Marshal was strong but never held the authority to act as a true decision-maker in the southern region, that power lay somewhere else entirely, in the hands of Anna's mother, the darling of the Southern Ruler.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:15

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

'You insolent fool, listen to your elders for once,' the Field Marshal Heatsend's voice thundered in Wyatt's mind and would have echoed in the depth of his soul if not for the world calamity tree's shell protecting his soul.

'You majesty, control yourself. You're above a third-tier city full of mortals, even a tiny whiff of your power can kill them,' Wyatt reminded the Field Marshal, set on provoking her.

'Wyatt, believe it or not, I will spank you,' the Field Marshal sitting on the clouds about the sky blossom city brimmed with rage. She wanted to guide the misguided junior but he was so full of himself that he ordered and dared to correct. If it were someone else they would be enjoying the fresh air 10,000 km above the city.

The Field Marshal both hated and liked Wyatt's bold and decisive way of handling things. Despite repeatedly being manipulated by Wyatt on several occasions she considered him a straightforward guy. That was mostly because her powerful intent sense could never sense malice from him. Honestly, she could not sense his intentions at all.

This was also why while the kids were debating about improving the orphanage system she could not guess what Wyatt was thinking from the beginning. Meanwhile, the other kids, Courtney, Diana, and Cindy, were all like an open book to her. Which was why she was sure that they meant what they said and that they were genuinely concerned about improving the orphanage system. But when it came to Wyatt, she could only choose to believe that he meant what he said.

Therefore, when Wyatt said he was going to give heinous criminals a second chance at redeeming themselves by managing orphanages, right after he helped the other kids see the mistake in ways to improve the orphanage system, she could not help but wonder that he really meant what he said or he had another motive. But when he said he was not only willing to forgive Clown Mask for killing his parents but also help her reintegrate with society, all her doubts about Wyatt's intention vanished and she believed he was the foolish person her father had warned her about.

'No, you will not. You adore me too much. Just make sure you convey my intention to Her Highness Southern Princess. I want Clown Mask released in my custody as soon as possible,' Wyatt brushed off the Field Marshal's warning as an empty threat and once again repeated his demand, continuing to provoke her to high heavens.

There was a reason he was so set on provoking the Field Marshal. Even though she was not a decision-maker in the Southern Region, she had a strong influence over every decision made as the aunt of the Southern Princess and her most trusted aid. By provoking the Field Marshal, Wyatt was trying to manipulate the information that the Southern Princess would receive from the Field Marshal.

If the Field Marshal were to inform Anna's mother that Wyatt was planning to start a criminal rehabilitation and reintegration program as she normally did, then Anna's mother would not believe them as Wyatt's true intention and directly began to wonder what he was up to.

However, if the Field Marshal were too sensitive about Wyatt being foolish with his stupid idea, then the information she would be giving Anna's mother would be totally biased. Seeing the Field Marshal so riled up, Anna's mother would think there was truth to matter. Even though she would still doubt his actions she would also be doubting her judgment and wonder if she might be wrong about it. As a result, she would give Wyatt the benefit of the doubt.

Wyatt did not think he could fool Anna's mother nor was he trying to, he just wanted to keep her guessing meanwhile he would achieve his agenda without much trouble. By the time she knows what happened, it will be too late for her to do anything about it.

Wyatt had long understood that the Field Marshal wasn't just his bodyguard but the best and most trusted means of Anna's mother to keep an eye on him and his activities. Just like how he planned to use the criminal rehabilitation and reintegration program to build

his army, Anna's mother was using his security as a reason to monitor him through her most trusted aid.

Knowing her, Anna's mother must have long guessed that Wyatt was trying to diversify and decrease his dependence on the Southern Royal family. Wyatt also guessed their upcoming met would mostly be about her trying to increase Wyatt's dependence on the Southern Royal family by any means possible.

'I will not do such a thing. Not only is your idea foolish, but who do you think you are to ask me to act as your messenger? Boy, I do adore you but you are asking for an ass-whooping now,' the Field Marshal's patience was waning. She could not believe the person they believed to be the future of the Southern Region would be capable of thinking something so foolish.

'Fine, I will get her out myself. Just don't blame later for not following the proper procedure,' Wyatt responded, saying that he would free Clown Mask himself.

'You? I know you are strong but where Clown Mask is being held, power is of no use. Stop wasting time on foolish ideas and focus on increasing your active soul energy,' the Field Marshal laughed at Wyatt's words and advised him to increase his realm first, instead of wasting time on foolish ideas like criminal rehabilitation programs.

'Your Highness, respectfully, you have no idea what I am capable of. If I wanted to I can free Clown Mask right now. I just do not be disrespectful toward the Southern royal family,' Wyatt said feeling challenged.

'Really. Let me tell you what Wyatt, if you manage to free the Clown Mask in the next 8-hours I no longer persuade you to give up on your idea of starting criminal rehabilitation and reintegration programs. But if you fail to free Clown Mask, you have to give up on your foolish endeavor and follow my arrangement. Do we have a deal?'

...

AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:19

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

The Field Marshal was very cautious when she proposed the wager to Wyatt. Yes, she was confident in the secret facility holding Clown Mask. However, she was also sure that Wyatt would not make empty claims. She knew Wyatt enough to not underestimate him.

She believed since he said he could free Clown Mask, then he might already be aware of the secret facility where Clown Mask was being held and its whereabouts. What puzzled her the most was his confidence to make such a claim despite knowing the secret facility and its capabilities.

Even the leader of the Freedom Fighter Henricks would not dare to make such a claim as even his origin card ability allowed him to go anywhere he wanted to would not be able to enter that place. This was not just the field Marshal's speculation but fact.

After Luna defected to the Freedom Fighters, it was clear that she had informed Henricks about Clown Mask and her future vision. Yet he never came to kidnap her, that was because of the secret facility. In there, everyone was mortal regardless of their realm. Even the Field Marshal was a mere mortal in there but thanks to her 'Unparalleled bloodline' she could retain her physical prowess.

So it was puzzling to the Field Marshal that Wyatt would claim that he could free Clown Mask. She even doubted if Wyatt had no idea about the secret facility which was why he had made such a bizarre claim but then she did not dare to underestimate Wyatt.

Therefore the Field Marshal added a strict time limit to her wager. 8 hours, Wyatt had to complete the wager in 8 hours. That was the minimum amount of time it would take her to reach the secret facility at her maximum speed, but it was a different story if she used a teleportation card. So she would like to see Wyatt free Clown Mask from the secret facility in the next eight hours. Not to mention she had already contacted the personnel in charge of the secret facility to upgrade the security of the facility to maximum security and a separate security detail to constantly monitor Clown Mask.

This way, even if Wyatt were to somehow manage to reach the secret facility and infiltrate it, he would never be able to sneak Clown Mask out of there with security constantly monitoring the Clown Mask. Worst comes to worse, in case she was alerted of a disturbance in the facility she will carry Wyatt and go there to check on the facility. With her there, Wyatt can forget about helping Clown Mask escape the facility.

So no matter how she saw it, the Field Marshal felt that she would win the wager. Still, if Wyatt were to somehow manage to pull a miracle and free Clown Mask from the secret facility, all she would be losing was the right to persuade Wyatt not to pursue the criminal rehabilitation and reintegration program.

Despite ensuring all this, the Field Marshal was still worried. What she was worried about was if Wyatt would agree to her wager. And she had good reason to be worried as Wyatt did not agree to her wager saying, 'Only a fool would agree to that wager.'

Seeing her worry come true the Field Marshal felt bad and a little happy that she did not enter a wager with Wyatt. After all, was someone who fooled the devil. The devil was so infuriated that it had sent its incarnation to kill him, yet failed to kill him. Field Marshal could not bring herself to underestimate Wyatt so she was a little relieved that Wyatt did not agree to her wager, it saved her eight hours of constant worry.

However, her relief had arrived too soon as Wyatt was not done. Rejecting her wager, he requested better stakes for the wager, 'Your Highness, I will agree to your wage if you are willing to increase stakes. If I win the wager I want your full support with regards to my criminal rehabilitation and reintegration program.'

'That's it?' the Field Marshal asked in puzzlement, she thought Wyatt would try to increase the time limit of the wager but to her astonishment, he did not.

'Yes, that is it. So do we have a wager?' Wyatt asked gentle smile graced his lips feeling that the Field Marshal was cute. Did she think that he did not know that the eight-hour time limit wasn't even sufficient for him to reach the secret facility unless he used a teleportation card to get teleported to a location near the secret facility?

Unfortunately for the Field Marshal, no matter how cautious she was, she had no idea about the means at his disposal. Stuck in the card world, the Field Marshal's experience and knowledge were seriously limited for someone of her strength. Wyatt wondered why she never tried to venture into the dark realm like her ancestors.

Was it because of the Southern Region's poor state? Well, when her house was not in order how can she have time for adventures? Wyatt did not believe that the Southern Royal family did not have a way to enter the dark realm when their ancestors had managed to successfully stop a demon invasion. After all, it was impossible to kill a devil unless they were slain in the Dark realm.

Listening to Wyatt's proposal, the Field Marshal contemplated hard, whether to enter a wager with Wyatt. She found it funny how she was the one who proposed the wager but now she was hesitating to agree to it. In the heat of the moment, she wanted to agree to the wager, but seeing Wyatt's confidence she could not bring herself to agree to it. Not to mention if she lost she would have to support him with his foolish idea.

After a lot of contemplation, she still could not ignore the change to guide Wyatt back to the right path, so she agreed, "Fine, you have eight hours starting now."

...

AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,103 words]

Chapter 1949 Competitor

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:24

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Listening to the Field Marshal agree to the updated wager, Wyatt chuckled. His manipulation seemed to have worked a lot better than he had thought. But then, he thought it might be because the Field Marshal genuinely cared about him. Otherwise, he could not see a reason why an esteemed demigod like herself would be bothered to propose such a wager in the first place.

This made Wyatt feel a little guilty, but this was also why he did not ask the Field Marshal to take an oath or enter a contract for the wager. He trusted her to uphold her stake if she lost just like how she trusted him to do the same.

Wyatt's relationship with the Southern royal family was very complicated. The Southern royal family was like the overbearing parents who constantly undermined their son and wanted him to do as they said while Wyatt was like the rebellious son who did everything in his power to get his way and prove them wrong, even if it meant manipulating his metaphorical parents. Hopefully, one day the Southern Royal family and Wyatt manage to get past these games and trust each other.

"Mmh mum mmh," Cortney kept struggling to say something with her mouth gagged by celestial force, she could not get a single word out. She then resorted to using Bloodette as her mouthpiece, "Wyatt, Cortney is telling when she manages to get herself free she will kick your ass and make you apologize to her."

Soon Wyatt's head manifested next to Cortney and reasoned with her, "Cortney, I know you do not agree with my opinion but as my friend can't you support me?"

Listening to Wyatt's words, Cortney stopped struggling and then after a quick contemplation, feeling the restraint on her mouth vanish, she said, "Why should I? When you did not support me. This was my idea until you made a mockery of it. Not only did you not apologize to me but you dared to restrain me and ask me to support your foolishness. You have some nerve, Dalton Wyatt."

Hearing Cortney call him by his full name, Wyatt knew she was genuinely mad at him this time. However, knowing Cortney's weak point, he replied with a hint of sadness, "I

know I have been a bad friend but Cortney, I need you. Please can you forgive me this once and help me?"

Listening to Wyatt plead for her help, Cortney's eyes widened. She did not expect him to apologize to her, let alone plead for her help. Her expression finally eased and she muttered, "Well since you asked it nicely, I will help."

As impulsive and wild as Cortney was, it made her too predictable. Making her an easy target to please. With Cortney's anger handled, Wyatt turned to Diana and Cindy, but before he could speak, Diana said, "Don't worry, boss. You will always have our support. Though we do not think people willing to kill to pass the time can value human life we have full faith in you and your decision. So, we will do our best to help you."

"What the fuck, Diana?" Cortney yelled in disbelief and then complained, "I begged you to help me so many times but both of you gave up without trying but now you are going all in his foolish idea even him without having to ask you to him?"

"He is our beloved boss. He will always have our support. Besides, he knows what he wants and how to do it but you had zero idea what you wanted not to mention how to do it. You wanted us to give you all the answers. But he has all the answers and just needs some assistance," Diana said with firm eyes, Cindy nodded her head vigorously agreeing with Diana.

"Kiss ass," Cortney commented, listening to Diana point out the flaws in her way of asking for help to them.

"Enough about this. Do you guys have something else to update me on?" Wyatt changed the topic, feeling Cortney might explode if they continued on the same topic since Diana and Cindy did not have her back when she needed it.

"Yes, Boss." Diana nodded and then looking at Cindy, she said, "You should report it since you are leading the project."

"Thank you, Diana," Cindy thanked Diana for not trying to steal her role and then reported to Wyatt, "Boss, during our recent investigation we have learned that someone in the north is selling mass-produced pleasure cards. Their concept is the same as our pleasure card business model, but since I was unable to get my hands on their pleasure card I have no idea how good or bad their product is.

But according to the customer review so far, it is said to be worth the price and satisfactory. It appears someone beat us to the punch and has already claimed the central region market with their mass-produced pleasure cards. It would not be long for them to spread to other regions.

As for us, we are still nowhere near improving the response and reactions of our slime fairy pleasure cards. However, seeing that we already have a competitor I think we

should release the unfinished products in the market. They are good enough. Because one the other pleasure car monopolizes the market it will be hard for our products to enter the market, let alone become a success."

Wyatt patiently listened to Cindy's report and recommendation. Then, with a gentle smile, he said, "I know who our competitor is. I allowed him to copy our pleasure card business idea. So, I can confidently tell you, that you are looking at it in the wrong way.

Trust me, he is not our competitor monopolizing the market. Instead, he is someone helping us create a market for pleasure cards. With his status and authority, he can help us deal with all the sanctions and regulations that we were worried would hinder our pleasure cards.

Once he opens up the market for pleasure cards, we will sweep the market with our fully developed pleasure cards and monopolize the market in a single attempt. So don't get distracted by it and continue according to our schedule."

Listening to Wyatt assure them, Cindy, Diana, and Vivian nodded while Cortney and Bloodette wondered what pleasure cards were. Just then, the Field Marshal's voice sounded in Wyatt's mind, 'What are you doing? You do know you only have less than Eight hours to free the Clown Mask, right?

...

AN: Check out the Author's thoughts section for Reader's Quest Board and mass release.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:27

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Seeing Wyatt casually discuss his business with his staff having just agreed to an impossible wager with a tight time limit, the Field Marshal frowned. She almost got the feeling that Wyatt might have forgotten their wager. But she knew Wyatt well enough to know, he would not make such dumb mistakes and felt he might have already commenced his plan to free Clown Mask. This thought made her uneasy. So to make sure her hunch was right she could not help but contact him to gauge what he was up to.

'Eight hours is a lot of time. Besides, Your Highness, I mean disrespect by this, but why do you care? You are betting against me remember,' Wyatt reminded the Field Marshal, knowing she was suspicious of his actions. However, he genuinely felt that eight hours was a lot of time for him to complete his wager with the Field Marshal to free Clown Mask from their custody.

Field Marshal did not respond to Wyatt, feeling that she was feeding him information about her mental state rather than gauging what he was up to. She had long learned to be wary about what she said and did around Wyatt. Understanding that just like her niece, this boy could not be underestimated because of his realm, actions, and words. Both of them were deeply hidden and only let others see what they wanted them to see.

The Field Marshal had warned herself about this before accepting the wager. She knew she would come to regret entering a wager with Wyatt. She was not new to mind games nor did she shy from them but it's just that Wyatt and her niece played at a higher level than her. Which gave her a head.

Right now she wanted to take Wyatt and go to the hidden facility where Clown Mask was kept to guard both of them simultaneously for the next eight hours but then she did not act on it thinking that maybe Wyatt was counting on her to do exactly that.

This uncertainty, was always present when dealing with these two. She was the strongest but strength cannot solve everything. Not to mention these two were among the few people she cared for. This made it even harder for her. Which was why she did not want to go against them unless she absolutely had to.

Shaking her head, the Field Marshal gathered her wits. Now all she would do was make sure that everything on her end was solid. She once again contacted the facility holding the Clown mask and requested them to give their best for the next eight hours. Just then thinking of something she hurriedly said to Wyatt, 'You do know that you are not allowed to hurt the staff during the course of this wager.'

'Of course, who do you think I am to hurt my own people? Don't worry neither me nor my people will not touch a single person guarding Clown Mask,' Wyatt promised the Field Marshal, even though he strongly felt that she should have thought of this before agreeing to the wager. Anyway, it did not matter since he did not plan to harm anyone to free Clown Mask.

'Your people hurt the people guarding Clown Mask, that's a joke, right? Who are these people of yours? The hoodlum youngsters or the low-level adventurers. You do know that the card apprentices guarding Clown Mask are of card emperor realm minimum. Not to mention they all excel in martial arts and have superior physical strength—,' The Field Marshal suddenly stopped, thinking she unintentionally was leaking a lot about the facility. Even if Wyatt already knew this information, she should not be unknowingly confirming it for him. That was not professional at all.

Wyatt chuckled finding the Field Marshal's clumsiness cute. She was scary strong but as a person, she had a good personality. He could see befriending someone like her. With crazy friends like Cortney and Corey, he could use some normal.

"Wyatt, what is a pleasure card? None of them is answering me," Cortney asked Wyatt when Diana, Cindy, and Vivian avoided answering using various reasons.

"You have a working grimoire don't you, go search it on the grimoire network," Wyatt said, feeling that if Jill's father must have already started selling his pleasure cards then he should have a proper ad for his product on the network, Cortney should be able to find a proper explanation on the grimoire network about pleasure card than asking him.

Speaking of Jill's father, Wyatt could not believe that the old dude had not only created his version of the pleasure card so fast but was also selling it in the central region. 'He is fast.' Wyatt thought.

Then, Wyatt pondered if it was because he was busy creating his version of the pleasure that Demigod Norley did not respond to his distress call to rescue over a hundred thousand people from becoming a human sacrifice. Even if that were the case he could have contacted him later. But Wyatt, himself, was unavailable for the last day since he was stuck in the blood rule source dealing with multiple ruler-class beings.

Wyatt wondered if he should call Jill and clear the air. After all, Demigod Norley was her father, she should know the reason why he did not respond to his distress call. While he was at it he could ask her to share her father's pleasure card with him. He had no presence in the Central region so he could not get his hands on Demigod Norley's mass-produced pleasure card to judge it. Though the ads demigod Norley put for his products came with a lot of promise it was still unknown if the product could fulfill all of them.

Even though Wyatt felt Demigod Norley could not outdo him, it would not hurt him to keep an eye on his competition. After all, Demigod Norley was one of the founding fathers of the current civilization Wyatt was enjoying. Nothing good would come from underestimating someone of Demigod Norley's prowess and status.

"Wyatt, tell me your pleasure cards come in the male version. Because I can't find any in the grimoire network," Cortney suddenly said, shocking everyone in the car.

...

AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:31

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"Why would you ask something like that Cortney?" Diana asked as she did not think someone as beautiful and outgoing would require a pleasure card to meet her needs.

"It just does not seem fair, women also need pleasure as much as men do. Why is it that they are selling pleasure cards for only males and not females?" Cortney replied, with a pout, recalling a few women in her life who could use a male version of a pleasure card to bring more diverse kinds of happiness to their lives.

Since Cortney's doubt was from the market point of view, Diana had no problem answering it, "That is because the market for the male version of pleasure card for women is not that big. In the market, except for cosmetics, clothes, and apparel, when it comes to bold products like these, it is a fact that men create demand and soon women follow. Take the example of the tobacco and liquor industry. It is not that they don't want to create a male version of the pleasure card for women but it still isn't time for it."

"Oh, I see. Women get all the cool stuff late," Cortney said recalling how hard it was for her hoverbike card to come in pink shade. She had to pay extra to have it custom-painted. She was not like most women. As the Tao Tongue of her generation, her beauty was way above average and never needed cosmetics and apparel to enhance it.

Meanwhile, the Field Marshal was wrecking her brain trying to think of Wyatt's game plan. It had been several minutes since they had agreed on the wager, yet he was having a casual discussion with his staff and friends. His nonchalant demeanor was getting to her. Because if it were her in his place she would be hurrying to get to the facility holding Clown Mask before the wager time limit concludes.

Eight hours might seem a lot but it was not enough for one to make it to the facility, infiltrate it, take Clown Mask out of it, and hide her in one's custody. Not to mention the time required to come up with a detailed plan to infiltrate and break out Clown Mask without getting noticed. 'Why isn't he doing something?' the Field Marshal screamed in her mind as she could not see what Wyatt was up to. 'If he just planned to give up then why agree to the wager?' Thinking of this the Field Marshal shook her head believing, 'Dalton Wyatt, I know, doesn't give up. He is up to something.'

Field Marshal thought of every possibility she could think of and even recalled every word Wyatt spoke while accepting and after accepting the wager to see if she missed something. She even remembered the joke that Wyatt cracked that his people would not hurt the guards guarding Clown Mask, just then a thought crossed the Field

Marshal's mind but she did not believe Wyatt would resort to that, 'No, he would not.' But then, seeing his laid-back appearance, she thought, 'He might.'

Unable to conclude if Wyatt would resort to something like that, she decided to get confirmation from Wyatt himself. 'Wyatt, tell me you are not planning on having our buddies from the Dark Realm help you break Clown Mask free from the facility.'

Listening to the Field Marshal ask him that, Wyatt's expression showed subtle changes. Catching them the Field Marshal yelled, 'You are. How could you collude with Dark Races, Dalton Wyatt? So now you trust them more than me and the Southern Royal family? You do know that that facility is sealing quite a few tricky devils and demons with weird abilities that even our ancestors could not kill? I knew I should have nipped this in the bud when you started borrowing the devil's powers and exchanging information with them. Look where it has gotten you, you guys are now partners in crime. Don't tell me you agreed to help them free those devils in exchange for their help. You didn't, did you?'

Just from the subtle change in Wyatt's expression, the Field Marshal thought the worst. How could she not? This was the most she had gotten while trying to read him since their meeting. When interrogating him, getting a subtle reaction was already a win in her book as this kid was a tough nut to crack. Somehow he was able to evade the deduction of her intent sense and manipulate her.

'No, why would you even think that? What makes you think I would release a few sealed devils just to win a wager? Is that what you think of me?' Wyatt denied it, as he would not need to join hands with dark races for something as little as this.

'Then what was that sudden shocked look on your face, when I asked if you planned to get help from your dark race buddies to free Clown Mask? Don't you dare lie to me, Dalton Wyatt!' the Field Marshal sternly inquired Wyatt.

'That is because I planned to use something I gained from the Dark Realm to free Clown Mask and I was just astounded to see you get so close to guessing my plan,' Wyatt replied honestly. He was really surprised that Field Marshal almost guessed his plans. It appears she was a lot smarter than he gave her credit for. Unfortunately for her, she had very little experience of the dark realm so she could never guess of how he was planning to free Clown Mask.

'I did? I almost guessed your plan,' the Field Marshal, herself, could not believe she came close to guessing Wyatt's game plan to free the Clown Mask. She felt proud, but then her expression changed and she hurriedly asked Wyatt, 'Now that I know, are you going to change your plan?'

'Don't get ahead of yourself, you know nothing. The plan is still a go,' Wyatt responded with a chuckle.

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:34

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"What is all this? This was supposed to be a normal breakfast with the Orphanage Headmaster and kids. Whose idea was it to assemble the Bright Lions for this? They are being an inconvenience and nuisance to the public," Wyatt asked seeking whom he should be scolding for turning a normal breakfast into a high-school gang meet. The road to the orphanage was jammed with teenagers in various high school uniforms forming a crowd holding posters and banners of Wyatt's image. Not to mention the city cops were nowhere in sight. Wyatt frowned and asked, "What are these high schoolers doing here? Shouldn't they be preparing for their college entrance exam?"

"Boss, these are not kids from the Bright Lions. You see the kids trying to manage the crowd. They are members of the Bright Lion gang," Diana informed Wyatt, only to hear him sternly say, "So it was you who ordered the Bright Lion gang to assemble by the orphanage."

"Boss, I know you do not like all this attention but you are the hope of the Southern Region. You are a huge celebrity now. Kids from all over the Southern Region have run away from their homes and cities to join the Bright Lions—" Diana prepared to give a stimulating lecture so that Wyatt would understand why she did what she did but was interrupted by him in the middle, "Wait, what do you mean by kids are running away from their homes and cities to join Bright Lions?"

"Boss, it is not like what you think. There are many troubled kids in this world. They saw Bright Lions as a beacon of hope and came running. If it wasn't Bright Lions they would have chosen to join some other organizations like the Circle," Cindy hurriedly explained not wanting Wyatt to misunderstand that they were up to no good again.

Diana nodded in agreement, and elaborated, "Boss, don't worry we have made proper living arrangements for these kids and most of them are living at the orphanage and helping with its expansion. Meanwhile, we are providing the kids with the proper professional help they need. Most of these kids are either orphans or come from a very

bad household. We are doing our best to help them. Not to mention we have found a few gems among them, that we believe will be a good addition to your empire."

"Fuck!" Wyatt cursed, and looking at the ceiling of the SUV, Wyatt yelled, "Why did you not inform me about this earlier?"

Wyatt was mad, not at Diana but the Field Marshal, because it was them who made him the hope of the South thinking it would be good for the Southerners. Now the people of the South were pouring in to help the hope of the South.

While Diana and Cindy saw troubled youths in these kids, Wyatt saw young souls seeking meaning in their existence by trying to become a part of something bigger. These kids weren't troubled and weak, they were innocent and strong. They were so strong that they found a way to look past their troubled past and decide to dedicate themselves to something bigger.

Yes, these kids all had their agendas and ambitions, they could have chosen to go anywhere to fulfill them, but they came to the 'Hope of the Southern region.' They all came here to achieve their ambitions while doing what they thought would be noble, helping the hope of the southern region. It was very much like teenagers joining the military wanting to serve and protect their nation.

The reason Wyatt hated the title 'Hope of the Southern Region' was not because it was cringe but because of the responsibility that came with it. The Southern Royal family and Anna's mother knew exactly what she was doing when she used her influence to make Wyatt the 'Hope of the Southern Region.'

Anna's mother had long seen through Wyatt's intention of branching out and becoming less dependent on the Southern Royal family. So this was one of her means to tie Wyatt to the Southern Region indefinitely. With billions of people expecting Wyatt to be their savior, even if Wyatt could not be the savior they wanted Wyatt also could not be the monster that betrayed their trust and aligned with some other region and forces.

Anna's mother knew regardless of how indifferent Wyatt was to the fame, he could never bring himself to become a traitor who betrayed the expectations that came with this fame. She did not want Wyatt to do great things she just wanted Wyatt to remain with the Southern region. She was mentally binding Wyatt to the Southern region with the fame and expectation that came from being the 'Hope of the Southern Region.'

"Wyatt, I don't know what's the big deal. They are all legal adults. They are free to choose what they want to do with their lives. Honestly, I think you guys are overreacting," Courtney said seeing Wyatt curse and yell. But Wyatt ignored her and waited for the Field Marshal to reply. However, the reply never came. The talkative Field Marshal suddenly went quiet.

"Boss, it is not just the Bright Lions. Many capable people have shown interest in joining the Fine Gold and TSR guilds. Many have offered very reasonable conditions to help us expand our business to the two-tier and one-tier cities around the Southern Region. But we rejected them feeling they were just interested in making use of your name," Diana revealed, it's not like she wanted to hide this from him. She thought this matter was not worth her busy boss's attention. But seeing him get so angry over Bright Lion's case, she decided to come clean before he found it by himself.

"How are these many kids able to move to the Sky Blossom city? Don't they need some kind of permission for immigration?" Because of the threat of the unchecked dungeons in between the cities and overpopulation stressing the local economy, the authorities strictly managed immigration between cities, especially between lower and higher tier cities. Wyatt doubted someone had asked the authorities to overlook it and he had a good hunch about who would be capable of doing that.

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:37

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"Turn the car around, hurry before someone spots us. Break the air traffic rules, just get me out of here," Wyatt ordered in urgency, morphing into a middle-aged average-looking businessman.

"Hey, Wyatt. What gives? Aren't you overreacting a bit much?" Cortney yelled, she had promised her orphanage headmaster, that she would bring Wyatt to the orphanage for breakfast.

Diana and Cindy were not wrong, Wyatt was indeed a big-time celebrity, and the kids in the orphanage all admired him. They would love to see and have some quality time with him. It was not easy for these kids to meet people they admired. Cortney understood the importance of the headmaster inviting Wyatt to the orphanage for breakfast. So she was taken aback to hear Wyatt order them to take him back.

"Yes, boss. Cortney is right. Aren't you overreacting a bit? I can understand you hate attention. But these kids and people have come a long way to meet the Hope of the Southern Region. It is not just them. Even our people have been working their bones for you but most of them have never met you in person. I thought it would be good for their morale to meet you and hear you speak some encouraging words," Diana spoke up seeing Wyatt morph into a total stranger.

Diana could not believe her boss who was rumored to have defeated a devil as a card master was afraid of little attention. Had she known, she would have sought his permission before making such arrangements. Besides, even if she had not made the arrangements people would gathered sooner or later once they knew the hope of the South was visiting the city's orphanage. After all, her boss's popularity was not less compared to any of the Southern region's Royalty.

"Boss, I hope you will adjust this one time. Because your public appearance will be a huge boost to the morale of our people who have been working day and night to manage the extra work that came with your sudden fame. They deserve this," Cindy would just pay the employees of Fine Gold, TSR guild, and members of Bright Lions overtime wages but that was not enough because they all have been pushing themselves out of admiration for their boss.

The fact that they were working for the hope of the Southern Region meant the world for these people, they were willing to work for free if there need be. Especially, the members of the Bright Lions. These kids had pulled their act together. Once they felt that they were all part of something bigger than they could imagine there was no stopping them. They took the initiative to work. Which was very rare. Having been part of a high-school gang she knew this from experience.

"Wyatt, I don't care about your phobia of fame. You promised you would have breakfast at the orphanage. Even If you don't mind not keeping your promise, I do. I promised the headmaster, I would bring you, and I will do just that. Driver, you hurry toward the orphanage before his jerk does something," Cortney yelled and ordered the driver who did not know whose order he should follow. If not for Cindy's assurance he would have turned the vehicle by now.

"Are you guys done?" Wyatt said glancing over Cindy, Diana, and Cortney. Since he had morphed his appearance he no longer felt as urgent as before.

"What that heck Wyatt? Don't you understand what I am saying? A promise is a promise, you don't go breaking them just because you feel like it," Cortney yelled in frustration while Bloodette repeatedly warned her not to fight Wyatt if she didn't want to be restrained by his invisible force. She was starting to hate the fact that she was weaker than Wyatt. If not for her promise to the headmaster, she would return to the dungeon seal to practice her active soul control.

"Shut it, I never promised anything but fine I will have breakfast at the orphanage but I will do it my way," Wyatt said to Cortney. Then, turning to face Diana and Cindy he ordered, "You two disperse the crowd. I am serious, do whatever it takes to achieve it. Their lives might be in danger. As for the morale, just gather those who contributed the most during this time. I will meet them in person and say a few words of encouragement."

"Wyatt you know you have to attend in your original appearance, right?" Cortney reminded, seeing him in a stranger's form and claiming he would keep his promise to her in his way she assumed the worst.

"I know," Wyatt replied summoning all bits of his patience. Only to hear Cindy ask, "Boss, you will be meeting our staff in the orphanage or our headquarters. Since they are all here, it would be convenient to meet them here."

Listening to Cindy, Wyatt felt his patience wasn't sufficient, just then Diana sternly said, "What's wrong with you two? Didn't you two just hear the boss say that there are lives in danger here?" But before Wyatt could sigh in relief that he had one sane person amidst his staff and friends, he heard Diana add, "But boss, they both have a point. You have to meet them in your original form and since they all are here you might as well meet them here. It will save you a lot of time."

Just when Wyatt was about to flip the entire car in rage, he heard the Field Marshal's voice, "Don't get angry. These kids have complete trust and faith in you. Therefore, they are focusing on things they know you will neglect instead of focusing on things that they trust you have under control. You should be happy that you have friends and staff that understand you so well. Wyatt, you are lucky to be surrounded by such good company." The Field Marshal wasn't making this up, her intent sense informed her of the thoughts and emotions going through Cortney, Cindy, and Diana's minds and hearts in real-time.

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1950 Male Version Of Pleasure Cards

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:27

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Seeing Wyatt casually discuss his business with his staff having just agreed to an impossible wager with a tight time limit, the Field Marshal frowned. She almost got the feeling that Wyatt might have forgotten their wager. But she knew Wyatt well enough to know, he would not make such dumb mistakes and felt he might have already commenced his plan to free Clown Mask. This thought made her uneasy. So to make sure her hunch was right she could not help but contact him to gauge what he was up to.

'Eight hours is a lot of time. Besides, Your Highness, I mean disrespect by this, but why do you care? You are betting against me remember,' Wyatt reminded the Field Marshal, knowing she was suspicious of his actions. However, he genuinely felt that eight hours was a lot of time for him to complete his wager with the Field Marshal to free Clown Mask from their custody.

Field Marshal did not respond to Wyatt, feeling that she was feeding him information about her mental state rather than gauging what he was up to. She had long learned to be wary about what she said and did around Wyatt. Understanding that just like her niece, this boy could not be underestimated because of his realm, actions, and words. Both of them were deeply hidden and only let others see what they wanted them to see.

The Field Marshal had warned herself about this before accepting the wager. She knew she would come to regret entering a wager with Wyatt. She was not new to mind games nor did she shy from them but it's just that Wyatt and her niece played at a higher level than her. Which gave her a head.

Right now she wanted to take Wyatt and go to the hidden facility where Clown Mask was kept to guard both of them simultaneously for the next eight hours but then she did not act on it thinking that maybe Wyatt was counting on her to do exactly that.

This uncertainty, was always present when dealing with these two. She was the strongest but strength cannot solve everything. Not to mention these two were among the few people she cared for. This made it even harder for her. Which was why she did not want to go against them unless she absolutely had to.

Shaking her head, the Field Marshal gathered her wits. Now all she would do was make sure that everything on her end was solid. She once again

contacted the facility holding the Clown mask and requested them to give their best for the next eight hours. Just then thinking of something she hurriedly said to Wyatt, 'You do know that you are not allowed to hurt the staff during the course of this wager.'

'Of course, who do you think I am to hurt my own people? Don't worry neither me nor my people will not touch a single person guarding Clown Mask,' Wyatt promised the Field Marshal, even though he strongly felt that she should have thought of this before agreeing to the wager. Anyway, it did not matter since he did not plan to harm anyone to free Clown Mask.

'Your people hurt the people guarding Clown Mask, that's a joke, right? Who are these people of yours? The hoodlum youngsters or the low-level adventurers. You do know that the card apprentices guarding Clown Mask are of card emperor realm minimum. Not to mention they all excel in martial arts and have superior physical strength—,' The Field Marshal suddenly stopped, thinking she unintentionally was leaking a lot about the facility. Even if Wyatt already knew this information, she should not be unknowingly confirming it for him. That was not professional at all.

Wyatt chuckled finding the Field Marshal's clumsiness cute. She was scary strong but as a person, she had a good personality. He could see befriending someone like her. With crazy friends like Cortney and Corey, he could use some normal.

"Wyatt, what is a pleasure card? None of them is answering me," Cortney asked Wyatt when Diana, Cindy, and Vivian avoided answering using various reasons.

"You have a working grimoire don't you, go search it on the grimoire network," Wyatt said, feeling that if Jill's father must have already started selling his pleasure cards then he should have a proper ad for his product on the network, Cortney should be able to find a proper explanation on the grimoire network about pleasure card than asking him.

Speaking of Jill's father, Wyatt could not believe that the old dude had not only created his version of the pleasure card so fast but was also selling it in the central region. 'He is fast.' Wyatt thought.

Then, Wyatt pondered if it was because he was busy creating his version of the pleasure that Demigod Norley did not respond to his distress call to rescue over a hundred thousand people from becoming a human sacrifice. Even if

that were the case he could have contacted him later. But Wyatt, himself, was unavailable for the last day since he was stuck in the blood rule source dealing with multiple ruler-class beings.

Wyatt wondered if he should call Jill and clear the air. After all, Demigod Norley was her father, she should know the reason why he did not respond to his distress call. While he was at it he could ask her to share her father's pleasure card with him. He had no presence in the Central region so he could not get his hands on Demigod Norley's mass-produced pleasure card to judge it. Though the ads demigod Norley put for his products came with a lot of promise it was still unknown if the product could fulfill all of them.

Even though Wyatt felt Demigod Norley could not outdo him, it would not hurt him to keep an eye on his competition. After all, Demigod Norley was one of the founding fathers of the current civilization Wyatt was enjoying. Nothing good would come from underestimating someone of Demigod Norley's prowess and status.

"Wyatt, tell me your pleasure cards come in the male version. Because I can't find any in the grimoire network," Cortney suddenly said, shocking everyone in the car.

...

Chapter 1951 Colluding With Demons

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:31

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"Why would you ask something like that Cortney?" Diana asked as she did not think someone as beautiful and outgoing would require a pleasure card to meet her needs.

"It just does not seem fair, women also need pleasure as much as men do. Why is it that they are selling pleasure cards for only males and not females?" Cortney replied, with a pout, recalling a few women in her life who could use a male version of a pleasure card to bring more diverse kinds of happiness to their lives.

Since Cortney's doubt was from the market point of view, Diana had no problem answering it, "That is because the market for the male version of pleasure card for women is not that big. In the market, except for cosmetics, clothes, and apparel, when it comes to bold products like these, it is a fact that men create demand and soon women follow. Take the example of the tobacco and liquor industry. It is not that they don't want to create a male version of the pleasure card for women but it still isn't time for it."

"Oh, I see. Women get all the cool stuff late," Cortney said recalling how hard it was for her hoverbike card to come in pink shade. She had to pay extra to have it custom-painted. She was not like most women. As the Tao Tongue of her generation, her beauty was way above average and never needed cosmetics and apparel to enhance it.

Meanwhile, the Field Marshal was wrecking her brain trying to think of Wyatt's game plan. It had been several minutes since they had agreed on the wager, yet he was having a casual discussion with his staff and friends. His nonchalant demeanor was getting to her. Because if it were her in his place she would be hurrying to get to the facility holding Clown Mask before the wager time limit concludes.

Eight hours might seem a lot but it was not enough for one to make it to the facility, infiltrate it, take Clown Mask out of it, and hide her in one's custody. Not to mention the time required to come up with a detailed plan to infiltrate and break out Clown Mask without getting noticed. 'Why isn't he doing something?' the Field Marshal screamed in her mind as she could not see what Wyatt was up to. 'If he just planned to give up then why agree to the wager?' Thinking of this the Field Marshal shook her head believing, 'Dalton Wyatt, I know, doesn't give up. He is up to something.'

Field Marshal thought of every possibility she could think of and even recalled every word Wyatt spoke while accepting and after accepting the wager to see if she missed something. She even remembered the joke that Wyatt cracked that his people would not hurt the guards guarding Clown Mask, just then a thought crossed the Field Marshal's mind but she did not believe Wyatt would resort to that, 'No, he would not.' But then, seeing his laid-back appearance, she thought, 'He might.'

Unable to conclude if Wyatt would resort to something like that, she decided to get confirmation from Wyatt himself. 'Wyatt, tell me you are not planning on having our buddies from the Dark Realm help you break Clown Mask free from the facility.'

Listening to the Field Marshal ask him that, Wyatt's expression showed subtle changes. Catching them the Field Marshal yelled, 'You are. How could you collude with Dark Races, Dalton Wyatt? So now you trust them more than me and the Southern Royal family? You do know that that facility is sealing quite a few tricky devils and demons with weird abilities that even our ancestors could not kill? I knew I should have nipped this in the bud when you started borrowing the devil's powers and exchanging information with them. Look where it has gotten you, you guys are now partners in crime. Don't tell me you agreed to help them free those devils in exchange for their help. You didn't, did you?'

Just from the subtle change in Wyatt's expression, the Field Marshal thought the worst. How could she not? This was the most she had gotten while trying to read him since their meeting. When interrogating him, getting a subtle reaction was already a win in her book as this kid was a tough nut to crack. Somehow he was able to evade the deduction of her intent sense and manipulate her.

'No, why would you even think that? What makes you think I would release a few sealed devils just to win a wager? Is that what you think of me?' Wyatt denied it, as he would not need to join hands with dark races for something as little as this.

'Then what was that sudden shocked look on your face, when I asked if you planned to get help from your dark race buddies to free Clown Mask? Don't you dare lie to me, Dalton Wyatt!' the Field Marshal sternly inquired Wyatt.

'That is because I planned to use something I gained from the Dark Realm to free Clown Mask and I was just astounded to see you get so close to guessing my plan,' Wyatt replied honestly. He was really surprised that Field Marshal almost guessed his plans. It appears she was a lot smarter than he gave her credit for. Unfortunately for her, she had very little experience of the dark realm so she could never guess of how he was planning to free Clown Mask.

'I did? I almost guessed your plan,' the Field Marshal, herself, could not believe she came close to guessing Wyatt's game plan to free the Clown Mask. She felt proud, but then her expression changed and she hurriedly asked Wyatt, 'Now that I know, are you going to change your plan?'

'Don't get ahead of yourself, you know nothing. The plan is still a go,' Wyatt responded with a chuckle.

...

Chapter 1952 Fame Bound

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:34

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"What is all this? This was supposed to be a normal breakfast with the Orphanage Headmaster and kids. Whose idea was it to assemble the Bright Lions for this? They are being an inconvenience and nuisance to the public," Wyatt asked seeking whom he should be scolding for turning a normal breakfast into a high-school gang meet. The road to the orphanage was jammed with teenagers in various high school uniforms forming a crowd holding posters and banners of Wyatt's image. Not to mention the city cops were nowhere in sight. Wyatt frowned and asked, "What are these high schoolers doing here? Shouldn't they be preparing for their college entrance exam?"

"Boss, these are not kids from the Bright Lions. You see the kids trying to manage the crowd. They are members of the Bright Lion gang," Diana informed Wyatt, only to hear him sternly say, "So it was you who ordered the Bright Lion gang to assemble by the orphanage."

"Boss, I know you do not like all this attention but you are the hope of the Southern Region. You are a huge celebrity now. Kids from all over the Southern Region have run away from their homes and cities to join the Bright Lions—" Diana prepared to give a stimulating lecture so that Wyatt would understand why she did what she did but was interrupted by him in the middle, "Wait, what do you mean by kids are running away from their homes and cities to join Bright Lions?"

"Boss, it is not like what you think. There are many troubled kids in this world. They saw Bright Lions as a beacon of hope and came running. If it wasn't Bright Lions they would have chosen to join some other organizations like the Circle," Cindy hurriedly explained not wanting Wyatt to misunderstand that they were up to no good again.

Diana nodded in agreement, and elaborated, "Boss, don't worry we have made proper living arrangements for these kids and most of them are living at the orphanage and helping with its expansion. Meanwhile, we are providing

the kids with the proper professional help they need. Most of these kids are either orphans or come from a very bad household. We are doing our best to help them. Not to mention we have found a few gems among them, that we believe will be a good addition to your empire."

"Fuck!" Wyatt cursed, and looking at the ceiling of the SUV, Wyatt yelled, "Why did you not inform me about this earlier?"

Wyatt was mad, not at Diana but the Field Marshal, because it was them who made him the hope of the South thinking it would be good for the Southerners. Now the people of the South were pouring in to help the hope of the South.

While Diana and Cindy saw troubled youths in these kids, Wyatt saw young souls seeking meaning in their existence by trying to become a part of something bigger. These kids weren't troubled and weak, they were innocent and strong. They were so strong that they found a way to look past their troubled past and decide to dedicate themselves to something bigger.

Yes, these kids all had their agendas and ambitions, they could have chosen to go anywhere to fulfill them, but they came to the 'Hope of the Southern region.' They all came here to achieve their ambitions while doing what they thought would be noble, helping the hope of the southern region. It was very much like teenagers joining the military wanting to serve and protect their nation.

The reason Wyatt hated the title 'Hope of the Southern Region' was not because it was cringe but because of the responsibility that came with it. The Southern Royal family and Anna's mother knew exactly what she was doing when she used her influence to make Wyatt the 'Hope of the Southern Region.'

Anna's mother had long seen through Wyatt's intention of branching out and becoming less dependent on the Southern Royal family. So this was one of her means to tie Wyatt to the Southern Region indefinitely. With billions of people expecting Wyatt to be their savior, even if Wyatt could not be the savior they wanted Wyatt also could not be the monster that betrayed their trust and aligned with some other region and forces.

Anna's mother knew regardless of how indifferent Wyatt was to the fame, he could never bring himself to become a traitor who betrayed the expectations that came with this fame. She did not want Wyatt to do great things she just wanted Wyatt to remain with the Southern region. She was mentally binding

Wyatt to the Southern region with the fame and expectation that came from being the 'Hope of the Southern Region.'

"Wyatt, I don't know what's the big deal. They are all legal adults. They are free to choose what they want to do with their lives. Honestly, I think you guys are overreacting," Courtney said seeing Wyatt curse and yell. But Wyatt ignored her and waited for the Field Marshal to reply. However, the reply never came. The talkative Field Marshal suddenly went quiet.

"Boss, it is not just the Bright Lions. Many capable people have shown interest in joining the Fine Gold and TSR guilds. Many have offered very reasonable conditions to help us expand our business to the two-tier and one-tier cities around the Southern Region. But we rejected them feeling they were just interested in making use of your name," Diana revealed, it's not like she wanted to hide this from him. She thought this matter was not worth her busy boss's attention. But seeing him get so angry over Bright Lion's case, she decided to come clean before he found it by himself.

"How are these many kids able to move to the Sky Blossom city? Don't they need some kind of permission for immigration?" Because of the threat of the unchecked dungeons in between the cities and overpopulation stressing the local economy, the authorities strictly managed immigration between cities, especially between lower and higher tier cities. Wyatt doubted someone had asked the authorities to overlook it and he had a good hunch about who would be capable of doing that.

...

Chapter 1953 Good Company

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:37

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"Turn the car around, hurry before someone spots us. Break the air traffic rules, just get me out of here," Wyatt ordered in urgency, morphing into a middle-aged average-looking businessman.

"Hey, Wyatt. What gives? Aren't you overreacting a bit much?" Courtney yelled, she had promised her orphanage headmaster, that she would bring Wyatt to the orphanage for breakfast.

Diana and Cindy were not wrong, Wyatt was indeed a big-time celebrity, and the kids in the orphanage all admired him. They would love to see and have some quality time with him. It was not easy for these kids to meet people they admired. Cortney understood the importance of the headmaster inviting Wyatt to the orphanage for breakfast. So she was taken aback to hear Wyatt order them to take him back.

"Yes, boss. Cortney is right. Aren't you overreacting a bit? I can understand you hate attention. But these kids and people have come a long way to meet the Hope of the Southern Region. It is not just them. Even our people have been working their bones for you but most of them have never met you in person. I thought it would be good for their morale to meet you and hear you speak some encouraging words," Diana spoke up seeing Wyatt morph into a total stranger.

Diana could not believe her boss who was rumored to have defeated a devil as a card master was afraid of little attention. Had she known, she would have sought his permission before making such arrangements. Besides, even if she had not made the arrangements people would gathered sooner or later once they knew the hope of the South was visiting the city's orphanage. After all, her boss's popularity was not less compared to any of the Southern region's Royalty.

"Boss, I hope you will adjust this one time. Because your public appearance will be a huge boost to the morale of our people who have been working day and night to manage the extra work that came with your sudden fame. They deserve this," Cindy would just pay the employees of Fine Gold, TSR guild, and members of Bright Lions overtime wages but that was not enough because they all have been pushing themselves out of admiration for their boss.

The fact that they were working for the hope of the Southern Region meant the world for these people, they were willing to work for free if there need be. Especially, the members of the Bright Lions. These kids had pulled their act together. Once they felt that they were all part of something bigger than they could imagine there was no stopping them. They took the initiative to work. Which was very rare. Having been part of a high-school gang she knew this from experience.

"Wyatt, I don't care about your phobia of fame. You promised you would have breakfast at the orphanage. Even If you don't mind not keeping your promise, I do. I promised the headmaster, I would bring you, and I will do just that.

Driver, you hurry toward the orphanage before his jerk does something," Cortney yelled and ordered the driver who did not know whose order he should follow. If not for Cindy's assurance he would have turned the vehicle by now.

"Are you guys done?" Wyatt said glancing over Cindy, Diana, and Cortney. Since he had morphed his appearance he no longer felt as urgent as before.

"What that heck Wyatt? Don't you understand what I am saying? A promise is a promise, you don't go breaking them just because you feel like it," Cortney yelled in frustration while Bloodette repeatedly warned her not to fight Wyatt if she didn't want to be restrained by his invisible force. She was starting to hate the fact that she was weaker than Wyatt. If not for her promise to the headmaster, she would return to the dungeon seal to practice her active soul control.

"Shut it, I never promised anything but fine I will have breakfast at the orphanage but I will do it my way," Wyatt said to Cortney. Then, turning to face Diana and Cindy he ordered, "You two disperse the crowd. I am serious, do whatever it takes to achieve it. Their lives might be in danger. As for the morale, just gather those who contributed the most during this time. I will meet them in person and say a few words of encouragement."

"Wyatt you know you have to attend in your original appearance, right?" Cortney reminded, seeing him in a stranger's form and claiming he would keep his promise to her in his way she assumed the worst.

"I know," Wyatt replied summoning all bits of his patience. Only to hear Cindy ask, "Boss, you will be meeting our staff in the orphanage or our headquarters. Since they are all here, it would be convenient to meet them here."

Listening to Cindy, Wyatt felt his patience wasn't sufficient, just then Diana sternly said, "What's wrong with you two? Didn't you two just hear the boss say that there are lives in danger here?" But before Wyatt could sigh in relief that he had one sane person amidst his staff and friends, he heard Diana add, "But boss, they both have a point. You have to meet them in your original form and since they all are here you might as well meet them here. It will save you a lot of time."

Just when Wyatt was about to flip the entire car in rage, he heard the Field Marshal's voice, "Don't get angry. These kids have complete trust and faith in

you. Therefore, they are focusing on things they know you will neglect instead of focusing on things that they trust you have under control. You should be happy that you have friends and staff that understand you so well. Wyatt, you are lucky to be surrounded by such good company." The Field Marshal wasn't making this up, her intent sense informed her of the thoughts and emotions going through Cortney, Cindy, and Diana's minds and hearts in real-time.

...

Chapter 1954 Challenge Accepted

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:41

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

As a powerful Demigod, the Field Marshal was gifted with a strong intent sense. She could sense the intentions of all including her family and subordinates. Regardless of how adept they were in masking their true intentions. That was the perk of being the best. Nothing was hidden from her.

However, it made it hard for the Field Marshal to get close to people knowing what they thought and expected from her. She could not get close to them and could not push them away. This was the burden of her god-like powers. Or just the weight of knowing what was expected of her.

This was because the Field Marshal wanted to do the best for her people but if she wanted to take advantage of them then she would not be burdened as much rather this god-like ability would enable her so nobody could stop her, just like how the Masters behind the central government were abusing their strong intent sense to manipulate their subordinates and subjects.

The Field Marshal wasn't the only one struggling with this, even Wyatt was, which was why Anna's mother could use the fame to bind Wyatt to the Southern region for the foreseeable future. The day Wyatt had risked his life to protect Anna, he had shown his weakness to Anna's mother. Knowing Wyatt was strongest against weapons and weakest against good intentions, she had been using it to fight Wyatt.

The Southern Royal family has been going out of its way to accommodate Wyatt in many ways. They even sent their strongest as his bodyguard. They

were being so nice to Wyatt that honestly, he found it overwhelming. Sometimes even Wyatt felt he did not deserve such treatment. What made it worse was knowing that Anna's mother was using it to manipulate him. It would not have worked if it was just the Southern Royal family, but it was the entire Southern region. This was especially because, unlike the Southern Royal family, the Southerner's faith in Wyatt was pure.

'Look who finally decided to speak. Why did you not inform me about this when we were talking about how to deal with Gideon Grim? Do you have any idea what would happen if even one person among the crowd was his puppet' Wyatt asked the Field Marshal.

'Wyatt, last time we tracked Gideon Grim's puppets there were none in the city,' the Field Marshal replied, she had to be tolerant to fix her niece's doing.

'Your Highness, you and I both know a lot has changed since then. Not to mention we are no longer able to track his puppets,' Wyatt retorted.

The last time the Field Marshal checked Gideon Grim's hypnotized puppets, Gideon Grim did not know that Wyatt had revealed his existence to the Southern Royal family and found a way to track his puppets. Not to mention turning him into the most wanted in the world. A lot has changed since then. Who knows how Gideon Grim planned to get back at him. Even if a single person were to detonate themselves in the crowd, the casualty would be devastating.

Wyatt only agreed to Courtney believing that it was a spontaneous request. Had he known about people immigrating to Sky Blossom City to help the 'Hope of the Southern region' he would never agreed to the request. Instead, he would be focusing on mass-producing cards that would detect if someone was hypnotized by Gideon Grim's origin card.

'Wyatt, you are overreacting. With me watching no one in the city would be able to detonate themselves, let alone a few in the crowd. Just boldly go and greet them all. Give them what they came for. Embrace the glory and show the world that you are not afraid of anyone,' the Field Marshal encouraged Wyatt while subtly using words like 'not afraid' to provoke him.

'You contacted Anna's mother, didn't you? Did she ask you to get me to play the part she has arranged for me? It's no use talking to you about this. Just tell me when she is going to meet me or do I have to go personally meet her? Knowing her ego she is waiting for me to find her, isn't she?' Wyatt finally

realized why Anna's mother never came despite Colleen, Ann, and others repeatedly telling him he would find the answers during his meeting with Anna's mother.

'I don't know what you are talking about. With me here what are you afraid of?' the Field Marshal denied all of Wyatt's claims and continued to persuade him to go into the limelight. She could not be more obvious.

'Well, she can forget it. I am never going to seek her. Heck, I will force her to come to meet me,' Wyatt said, with the most sadistic grin he could fathom.

'Wyatt, why does it always have to be your way? Can't you just let it be?' the Field Marshal said fearing the worst, the clash between her niece and Wyatt.

'Why does it have to be her way then?' Wyatt retorted, instructing his super brain card to search for Anna's mother's location and learn what she was up to.

'Well—' The Field Marshal could not find an answer that would not simulate Wyatt further, so she said, 'How about this, I will arrange a meet between you two at a neutral place, date, and time. I will decide when, where, and how you two will meet. What do you think? Is this enough?'

'So you agree that Anna's mother never planned to meet me but was waiting for me to find her. I should have seen this a lot sooner. Hahaha, this is going to be fun,' feeling challenged after a long time, Wyatt laughed thinking he might as well enjoy this since it was not often he would feel this way.

'Why do you keep saying and doing the exact opposite of what I ask of you?' the Field Marshal said feeling helpless.

...

Chapter 1955 Great-Nephew-In-Law

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:45

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

The Field Marshal Heatsend could not believe she who used to rule the Way Beyond, was reduced to a mere mediator between the mother-in-law and son-

in-law pair. Both of them were overbearing control freaks, who did not know how to take a step back. She blamed demigod Norley for this. If he had not shown up, her niece would not have had a proper reason to send her here to spy on her great-nephew-in-law while acting as his bodyguard.

'Wyatt, whatever you are up to, I suggest you give up. Because if you escalate things she will not back down,' the Field Marshal advised Wyatt, seeing the most ominous grin she had seen pasted on his face.

There was another reason why the Field Marshal felt like it was her duty to mediate between Anna's mother and Wyatt. It was the fact that Wyatt figured out what Anna's mother was up to while talking to her of all people, she thought if anyone were to slip up it would be Colleen, her sister-in-law, but she never thought that it would be her of all people.

Disappointed in herself, the Field Marshal took away all the credit she gave herself for almost figuring out Wyatt's game plan to free Clown Mask.

'I am not afraid, Your Highness. As you said earlier, with you by my side what do I have to be afraid of,' Wyatt said, listening to the Field Marshal warn him that Anna's mother will not overlook his provocations.

'Wait, I only said that about facing the crowd gathered by the orphanage. I did not mean anything about fighting against your mother-in-law. Keep me out of it, she is scary and mean as heck. Worst of all, she knows how to hold a grudge. I don't want to be part of it,' the Field Marshal rambled at the mere thought of being a part of a rebellion against her niece.

This, right here, clearly showed how strong of a grip Anna's mother had on the Southern royal family and its key figures. It was a surprise that she was not chosen as the next heir by the Southern Ruler. It was very likely that she stepped down and gave her unruly daughter the honor.

'My mother-in-law? She wishes,' Wyatt remarked. Then, he added, 'Come on, Your Highness, don't tell me you have never thought about knocking your niece a peck down? Or at least you might imagine who among the two of us is the best, right? Get on board with me, I will show what winning is like.'

Wyatt blatantly tried recruiting the Field Marshal into his despite knowing she was spying on him for Anna's mother which was what it more fun. What would be more of a provocation to Anna's mother than stealing her trusted aid from her side? The Field Marshal guessed what Wyatt was thinking and

responded, 'Keep me out of it. Knocking her a peck down with your help will not make me feel any good about myself. It would only make me feel that I betrayed my family. After all, she is family and you are not. Unless you agree you too are family.'

'...' Wyatt could not respond to the Field Marshal, there he was trying to recruit her against Anna's mother and there she was trying to tie him to their family using Anna's mother. Yep, the Field Marshal was not to be underestimated. She seemed to be well-versed in the secret skill of the elderly, match-making.

"Boss, what's wrong with you? You are acting weirdly. You are scaring Cortney," Diana spoke breaking the awkward silence in the car, seeing Wyatt not speak for long and make weird and ominous facial expressions.

Wyatt didn't answer Diana, and seeing that the crowd around the orphanage was still not cleared. Instead, it grew, he asked, "Did the Field Marshal Heatsend contact you and order you not to disperse the crowd?"

"I am sorry, boss. It's a command given by the royalty. I cannot go against nor can I disclose more about it," Diana was surprised. She wondered how her boss knew that the renowned Field Marshal herself had sent her a message asking her not to let Wyatt disappoint the crowd and fulfill his role as the 'Hope of the Southern region.' Otherwise, Wyatt would be heavily penalized for neglecting his duty. Reading Wyatt would get penalized, she did not even bother to question how the Field Marshal knew about this and why it concerned her, she just did what she was ordered. She did not go into details about the message from the Field Marshal because she did not want Wyatt to get into trouble with the Southern Royal family over this. She was worried for her boss.

"It is not your fault, you were just looking out for me," Wyatt consoled Diana, though he did not have intent sense like demigods, he had strong observation and deduction skills. Then, shaking his head, he contacted the people who would ruthlessly follow his order even if meant killing royalty. His calamity daughter gems. He ordered the Bright brothers to disperse the crowd. The Field Marshal might have full confidence in her ability to subdue any suicidal puppet of Gideon Grim in the crowd but Wyatt did not want any surprises. Therefore he did not take any chances and chose to be cautious.

Anna's mother wanted Wyatt to embrace the role of 'Hope of the Southern region' more so that he would be willingly tying himself to the Southern region and the Southern royal family. Hence, after learning that the Field Marshal

was confident about handling any surprises, she ordered the Field Marshal to persuade or provoke Wyatt into taking the stage she had set for him and entering the spotlight by any means possible except for force, which went without saying.

However, unlike Anna's mother, Wyatt did not have an alternative motive so he would rather not tempt his luck and stay cautious.

"What the heck? The cops showed up now of all times," Wyatt cursed receiving an update from Nick Bright that the cops were not allowing them to disperse the crowd claiming that the crowd was gathered on private property and the Bright Lions had no right to ask them to leave.

The Cops never dared to go against Bright Lions but today they were very aggressive. Wyatt thought, 'An order from the Field Marshal Heatsend, herself, should have that effect.'

...

- Chapter 1956 Baiting

[1,074 words]

Chapter 1956 Baiting

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:49

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"Boss, why are you fighting this? " Diana asked Wyatt in worry. Even the royalty was intervening in this matter, she felt something important was going on behind the scenes, which she wasn't eligible to know. But her cult loyalty and reverence in the Southern royal family told her that her beloved boss should just follow their arrangement and shouldn't fight it. However, if her boss needed her, she was willing to help him at the risk of her life.

That was because Diana felt her boss was a genuinely good person who was willing to give everyone a second chance. He gave someone as sinful as her a second chance. Her boss, Dalton Wyatt, was the only human on the card world fit to bear the title 'Hope of the Southern region.' He deserved all her devotion and respect because he had earned it.

"..." Wyatt sighed, listening to Diana. He might have gained their trust and faith, but it was still not enough to erase the decades of brainwashing the Southern royal family had put the Southerners through with patriotism and whatnot. For the Southerners, the royal family was not just their ruler, but it was also their spiritual leader, a symbol of faith. They were taught to cultivate faith and reverence toward the royal family when they were young.

Currently, in his group of friends and staff, except for his Calamity Daughter Gems, everyone held such emotions towards the Southern Royal family. For Wyatt, they would be willing to go against the Southern royal family, but it would depend on the circumstances. They would require a strong reason to help him fight the Southern royal family. Otherwise, they would prefer if Wyatt and the Southern royal family worked out their differences.

"Boss looks like the traffic will not clear anytime soon," Cindy said from the front passenger seat, looking at the haphazard mob waiting for the arrival of the 'Hope of the Southern region.'

"We can walk, the orphanage's western entrance is not far from here," Cortney suggested. Listening to her, Wyatt nodded, and asked Diana, "How is the security of the orphanage? Is its parameter breached?"

"I just received an update from Agent Debra Khan, with the help of the Bright Lions she managed to stop the crowd from entering the orphanage compound," Diana informed Wyatt, based on the latest information she got from within the orphanage.

"Good, order the Bright Lions to stop managing the crowd and focus on the orphanage security. Now the crowd is the cops' headache. We are walking to the orphanage," Wyatt instructed Diana. Then, turning to Cortney he said, "You are not allowed to reveal my identity until I make sure the surroundings are safe. I have made a lot of enemies and I don't want the orphanage and its kids paying the price for me. Not even your orphanage headmaster. Do you understand me?"

"Yes," Cortney affirmed aloud, nodding vigorously. She did not care as long as Wyatt fulfilled his promise.

"Boss, what about the staff with a high contribution to our organization? Should I invite them to join us for breakfast" Cindy asked Wyatt, seeing him nod, she cheered.

"Okay, then. Lead the way," Wyatt in his morphed middle-aged businessman form said to Cortney, after getting out of the car.

As everyone followed Cortney to the orphanage's western entrance, they did not attract much attention. Since except for Wyatt none of them were that popular, and they made a point to cover their faces with sunglasses and hats. Not to mention the crowd was not

so keen on observing a few businessmen and women walking the street because of the traffic jam.

Wyatt could have used his agility and flight to just rush into the orphanage, but he moved in the crowd and used his soul pupils to scan the crowd for any abnormality. Especially to check if there were any hypnotized puppets of Gideon Grim among the crowd. Just then he heard the Field Marshal's voice in his mind, 'Why do you keep doing this to me?'

'What did I do to you, Your Majesty? Your Highness was the one who shamelessly used her status to force my staff against me,' Wyatt said reminding the Field Marshal of the text she sent to Diana. He did not bother to mention how she used the cops.

'I was just using every means at my disposal to complete my mission,' the Field Marshal responded, saying she did what she had to do for the mission. She knew if she did not use extreme measures, Diana would not go against Wyatt's orders and directly snitch about her to him. She had first-hand experience of how much everyone in the SUV trusted and respected Wyatt. So, she did what she had to.

Then, the Field Marshal continued, 'Before, I met you my record was seamless. I had managed to complete every mission I was given successfully. But since I was assigned to you, my failure streak began. Do you have any idea how much control, patience, and work goes into achieving a few centuries long seamless mission record? Now it is all ruined because you are not willing to listen to your elders and want to do everything your way—'

'Your Highness, you and I know, you do not care about your mission records. You might have cared about it when you were young but not now. So, please spare me the emotional manipulation. I am not going to address the crowd as the 'Hope of the Southern region.' You can forget about it,' Wyatt interrupted the Field Marshal in the middle of her heart-to-

heart and asked her to cut the bullshit.

'Well, I tried,' the Field Marshal said as if she gave up, but Wyatt knew she was far from done and only said it to get his guard down. Which was good, as he planned to use that spirit of hers to bait her into his trap, 'Your Highness, there is a way for you to not only get me to embrace the title 'Hope of the Southern region' but also agree to become your family. I don't know if you are willing to give it a try.'

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:51

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

'I am listening,' the Field Marshal responded, acknowledging the bait that Wyatt threw her way.

'I guess you are not as interested as I thought you were, Your Highness,' Wyatt said pretending to pull the bait away, not getting the right response from the Field Marshal.

'Alright, what do I need to do in return?' the Field Marshal hoped she could get Wyatt to give more but seeing him take away what he was ready to give, she caved and hurriedly bit the bait.

How could she not? Wyatt was dangling everything she could hope from him in front of her. If she could get Wyatt to willingly embrace his title 'Hope of the South,' as her niece urged her to persuade him to do so, and also get Wyatt to become a part of their royal family, just as many in their family had hoped, she would become the hero of the family, especially in Anna's eyes. So she could not help but perk her ears when Wyatt proposed these terms.

'Now, you are speaking my language. In return, I want your full support, switch your alliance to me,' Wyatt revealed his terms. He had long decided to teach Anna's mother a lesson by stealing her most trusted aid, Field Marshal Heatsend.

'Not happening,' the Field Marshal rejected without thinking. Which only made Wyatt smile, as he asked, 'Why not? Don't you want to help the 'Hope of the Southern region?'

'Wyatt, I know what you are trying to do and it will not happen,' the Field Marshal saw through Wyatt's intentions, well he wasn't trying to hide it. He was slowly reeling her in.

'Your Highness, I am not only willing to play my role but also become your family, what else will it take for me to gain your alliance? Besides, What kind of 'Hope of the South' would I be if I didn't have the trust and support of the 'Hero of the South?',' Wyatt pointed out.

After all, the Field Marshal did say, she would not go against her family for someone who was not her family. Now he was practically becoming a part of her family, yet she was hesitant to give him her support.

'It is not as simple as you make it sound,' the Field Marshal retorted, feeling trapped by her own words.

'I see, you want me to do as you say but at the same time, you don't want to give me what I want. Was that simple enough?' Wyatt basically said the Field Marshal wanted to screw him over. Regardless of her nuanced words, that was the gist of it. Not just her, but the entire Southern royal family.

Well, except for Anna. The last time Wyatt saw her, she gave him the feeling if he asked her to, she would not hesitate to betray the Southern royal family for him. That's the feeling he got from her. That was extreme and heartless, but that was how Anna rolled, pursuing what she wanted with one track mind. As for her other worries, they were split into her innate twin Ann. Hence, her thoughts were not much complex, nor was it her style. Wyatt couldn't believe he missed that crazy and spoiled princess.

'Wyatt, you are overthinking things. Things are not that simple. Since you are becoming a part of our family, would you be willing to part with your manager, if I asked you to?' the Field Marshal turned Wyatt's fingers onto him. Asking him, since he was joining their family by marrying Anna, would he give up on Susan?

'Wait, you are telling me it's okay for me to be with whoever I please even if I chose to become your family?' Wyatt did not know he could continue to see other people after marrying into the royal family.

'No, that was not what I meant. Stop twisting my words— You devil,' the Field Marshal gave up, understanding there was no winning with Wyatt. He was one of the most difficult person she had met. He was stubborn, uncompromising, and unyielding.

'Your Highness, let me make it easier for you. How about we make another wager? If you win you will get what you want without having to do anything in return,' Wyatt proposed. He remained patient, he didn't try to tug too strong worrying that the string would snap and all he worked for so far would be for nothing.

'Another wager? Why would I willingly put myself through that mental torture again, when I am already experiencing it? No, thank you,' the Field Marshal had already been at the end of her wits about how Wyatt planned to free the Clown Mask when he was busy here. She knew, Wyatt would not give up and had some plan, but she had little idea what it was, which made it harder for her to stay calm. If not for her new mission to get Wyatt to embrace his title as 'Hope of the South' distracting her, she would be wrecking her brains right now trying to figure out Wyatt's game plan.

When the Field Marshal could not handle the hell of having entered a wager with Wyatt, why would she go out of her way to get herself another one of those, she wasn't a masochist. So, she rejected Wyatt without hesitation. The stakes proposed by Wyatt were indeed very attractive, but she did not think her mind could handle another one of Wyatt's mind games. She wasn't up to the challenge.

'Fine. I will make it a lot easier for you, how about we bet on an already existing wager?' Wyatt proposed to improve on their already existing wager, seeing that the Field Marshal would not even consider the idea of entering another wager with him.

The Field Marshal contemplated for a second and then responded, 'How do we do that?' Though she was unsure what Wyatt was up to she decided to hear him out.

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:54

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Knowing what people wanted and what they would be willing to pay for it was a skill good. But knowing what they would be willing to risk for what they want and getting them to risk it, now that was the devil's work.

Listening to the Field Marshal ask how they would go about betting on an already existing wager, Wyatt nodded in satisfaction. The fact that she was willing to hear him out was enough to give Wyatt the confidence that if said all the right words he could get the Field Marshal to willingly walk into his trap masked as a game of wits, which she was confident about winning believing that she held the dominant cards.

'Simple, we modify the existing wager. Like maybe add more conditions to it or increase its difficulty, something like that,' Wyatt explained.

Wyatt purposely proposed to bet on the existing wager, knowing that the Field Marshal would love to add a few more conditions to the wager they agreed to. Especially, now that she had tasted the fear of uncertainty and the unknown.

The fact that Wyatt would be willing to make the wager more difficult for himself, would be a huge warning sign for the Field Marshal. Knowing her, she would not make the mistake of underestimating Wyatt. So what was Wyatt thinking proposing something so obvious?

It was the Field Marshal's confidence that he was counting on, for her to agree to his proposal of wagering on the existing wager.

The leader's mindset, have you ever wondered what's going on in the minds of the people who carry their entire team through a project, mission, or a game? What would be going on in their mind, disdain for their fellow teammates or the thought that the task at hand was not challenging enough? Well, that varies from person to person based on their personality, but one thing was common among all of these leaders, they were all confident in their abilities.

They were not overconfident or underestimating their enemies, they were just confident in their skills and judgment. They did not bother to waste their precious time worrying about what they could not control and would always give their hundred percent where it was required since they were playing to win regardless of the odds.

Such was the case of the Field Marshal, she too was confident about her preparations for her wager with Wyatt. It's just that she was not used to sitting and watching her opponent. This was new to her. The eight-hour time limit she added to the wager, was now starting to feel like the amount of time she chose to be mentally tortured.

'Wyatt, you seem confident that you will be able to free Clown Mask,' the Field Marshal could not help but say this listening to him propose that they add more conditions to the wager and make it difficult.

The Field Marshal understood that Wyatt was confident about his means but so was she. In a game, both sides would be confident about their team's win. However, this doesn't mean that one side should just give up without playing. The winner isn't decided until the game concludes. Therefore, what would have been a sign for others to back away was not that much of a sign for the Field Marshal. Instead, it was a sign of provocation. She felt Wyatt was challenging her and the Southern Royal family's ability to watch over their prisoners.

Just because she was currently reduced to a babysitter for a teenager did not mean that the Field Marshal was to be underestimated. She was one of the top ten strongest in the Card world. She was a direct descendent of the Unparallel Demigod. She was the 'Hero of the South.'

Feeling her presence, the Supreme beings trembled and dared not to misbehave at the Way beyond. The records of her achievements were long and outstanding. How could she back away from a challenge? It should be Wyatt who should have thought twice before provoking her. He should be the one to reconsider the wager, not her.

'Yes, I am, Your Highness. Otherwise, there would not be a point for me to enter a wager with you, especially with such high stakes. Isn't that the same for you too, Your Majesty? If you are not then I can understand,' Wyatt was polite, but his words were

aggressive. He basically asked the Field Marshal, if she was not feeling confident, she should quit while she was ahead.

'Hahaha, will you look at that? Boy, if you are idea is to provoke me, then you are successful. Let us discuss the terms,' the Field Marshal laughed listening to Wyatt's words.

The Field Marshal was drawn by the attractive stakes that Wyatt proposed, but now she was staying to show Wyatt that he should not underestimate his elders. She felt Wyatt looked down on the Southern Royal family and its capabilities. Yes, during the course of their partnership, they did drop the ball on one or two occasions but what about the trouble they avoided for him without even him knowing? If not for them, Wyatt, his friends, and his family would not be enjoying a peaceful life in this 3rd-tier city.

'Sure, what do you have in mind?' Wyatt smiled, feeling the fish was almost in his grasp.

'Before, we begin, I would like to update you about your aunt, Kathy. She is in the southern academic region and will be your assistant when you take your post there,' the Field Marshal suddenly brought up, giving an example of things the Southern Royal family were doing for Wyatt without him knowing.

'Hahaha, thank you. I guess informing the border petrol and the Southern watch about her heading to the central academic region to join her job at Morningstar University worked out as I thought. It is good to know the authorities are doing their job,' Wyatt thanked the Field Marshal with a grin.

'You were the anonymous tipper?'

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 09:57

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

'It wasn't anonymous, I told them who I was. It is not my fault that they did not believe. Fortunately, they bothered to follow up on my tip,' Wyatt said causally.

Listening to his words, the Field Marshal felt his actions were irresponsible, especially considering the person in question was the only true family who did not want to take advantage of him. So, she sternly asked him, 'Why did you not report this to Ann or Colleen? They would have handled it with more care. Besides what's up with your grimoire it doesn't show your ID.'

'I did not feel the need to. Since I had contacted Kathy and informed her about the ordeal giving her the contact info of Ann. Though heartbroken she did not want to bother others and was set to return to Sky Blossom City to her old job as a high school teacher. As for my grimoire, I made a few adjustments to keep the peeping tom out,' Wyatt explained why he did not bother to report this to Ann or Colleen. As for his grimoire's privacy updates, he was honest about it.

'So, why did you contact the Border Petrol and the Southern Watch? Wait, you were testing them. Wyatt this is too much,' The Field Marshal wanted to ask Wyatt, 'What if there was a spy, how could he risk his only aunt's life like that?' But thinking it would only shine a bad light on Southern Border Petrol and the Southern Watch she did not bring it up.

'Do you even have to ask that? Let's say, if I was testing them, then would I not be also evaluating them? Besides, you should be happy your highness, your people did not let you down. However, they did not have to keep Kathy in the dark about what was going on until Colleen arrived. It caused her unnecessary mental stress. I think you guys should work on public relations a bit more,' Wyatt advised the Field Marshal while explaining to her that he had everything under control giving her a hypothetical.

'Wyatt, who the heck do you think you are to test and evaluate the Southern Border Petrol and Southern Watch?' Field Marshal's tone was sharp. She was pissed at the fact that Wyatt was seriously undermining the Southern Royal family and its authority, especially when they were lowering themselves to deem Wyatt as their equal partner. If they wanted to they would take everything from him and have him for work for them for pennies.

'Woah, I never agreed to having done such a thing. Besides, this was after the Southern Capital incident, I wasn't a big fan of you guys back then,' Wyatt denied the Field Marshal's charges against him, but was honest about why he did such a thing.

'You know, I can arrest and hold you in prison indefinitely for tampering with your grimoire,' the Field Marshal suddenly brought unable to counter Wyatt on his reason for his actions.

'Go ahead, arrest me,' Wyatt said, believing the Field Marshal was only trying to scare him.

'You think I won't?' the Field Marshal asked feeling challenged, then shaking her head she said, 'Forget it. I won't lower myself to a child's level.'

'Good for you, Your Highness. It would be pretty embarrassing to lose to a child,' Wyatt said sarcastically.

'Don't blame me, you asked for it,' saying that the Field Marshal mobilized her power to teach Wyatt a lesson.

Wyatt's senses warned rang, and soon his body was pushed down to the ground with an incredible and invisible force, 'Splat,' Wyatt's body was reduced to a red skid mark on the sidewalk. The crowd did not even notice what happened to him, except for Cindy and Diana who were following him and Cortney.

Before they could panic, a profound female voice informed them their boss was fine and they should prepare a change of clothes for him. The voice belonged to the Field Marshal. She knew about Wyatt's instant regeneration capabilities and decided to use them to complete her mission. The Field Marshal would not have thought of this plan if not for Wyatt provoking her.

Field Marshal Heatsend's plan was simple, she would squash Wyatt's body except for his mutant ego gem. That way Wyatt's ego gem would instinctively regenerate his body in its original form. When it does the onlooker would notice him and what happens next does not matter to her because she believed her mission was completed as long as she revealed Wyatt to the crowd. As for what Wyatt would do next, does not matter to her either, since her mission to give Wyatt to the crowd would be complete. After all, She can lead a horse to water, but she can't make it drink.

The Field Marshal was pleased with herself for coming up with such an ingenious plan to complete her mission, but the smile on her face froze when she saw Wyatt's mutated ego gem take the form of a Rainbowfly monster and then use stealth to hide and hover over the crowd.

'How is this possible?' the Field Marshal asked in astonishment. She had crushed Wyatt's entire body. Without a brain to command it, the ego gem should be instinctively regenerating his body into his original form and not into a fly monster, unless his spiritual body can function independently of his body. Considering, Wyatt was so adept in borrowing celestial force from the world that was obvious his. How could she have made such a simple oversight?

'Shocked?' Wyatt remarked. Then, he added in a sarcastic tone, 'I cannot believe that someone as noble and honorable as you would resort to such lowly means, Your Highness.'

'Shut it, you had it coming with that big mouth of yours,' Field Marshal said in frustration. She continued saying, 'And stop it with your fake politeness. Ditch the honorifics since you do not mean them. Hearing 'Your Highness' 'Your Majesty' from your mouth is starting to feel like a taunt.'

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 10:02

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

As honorable as the Field Marshal was she was equally despicable, otherwise it would be impossible for her to survive the battlefield from a young age. When faced with death, one has nothing: no honor, no shame, no pride—similar to when one was born with no honor, no shame, no pride. The Field Marshal's father who had taught her about honor was the one who had repeatedly told her this. Along with how foolish righteousness was contagious, it should be nipped in the bud.

Now that the Field Marshal had shown Wyatt both her honorable and despicable sides, she felt a lot more comfortable around him, going as far as to ask him to ditch the honorifics when addressing her.

'Sure, if you say so,' Wyatt agreed without a second thought as he did not care for it since the beginning.

'Sigh~ You could at least try to be a little reluctant,' the Field Marshal said feeling Wyatt was too shameless.

'Says the person who did not think twice before reducing me into a meat patty,' Wyatt remarked. He was not surprised that the World's Will did not hold Field Marshal responsible for breaching the contract between him and Anna.

There were many holes in the contract that Wyatt had drawn up for Anna to sign. Back then he was fresh to the card world and still did not fully understand the horrors of the card world. Especially the capabilities of the demigods.

However, even with little knowledge he had, he managed to draw up a contract that would ensure his safety and freedom at the end of the day.

How was the Field Marshal able to avoid breaching the contract despite destroying his physical body? It was simple, actually. The reason behind it was the same as how a

surgeon will not be tried for attempted murder for cutting a patient's chest to operate during the line of their duties. That was to say, what if the Field Marshal had to destroy Wyatt's body to save him? As long as Wyatt was alive at the end she would not be blamed.

How did the Field Marshal manage to fool the Card world's will into believing that her destroying Wyatt's body was to save him? Simply by erasing all the malice in her intent and replacing it with benevolence using her advanced control over her powerful intent sense. Not many in the card world could pull off something like this. It was Wyatt's luck that he ended up with a family that had quite a few people who were capable of doing something like this.

Not to mention Wyatt was also partially to be blamed because he had partially turned his body into an immortal. No matter how advanced the Field Marshal's control over her powerful intent sense was, it would all not be possible if not for his immortal physique. Regardless of the Field Marshal's intent during her action if she were responsible for Wyatt's death then she and her family would have to face the Wrath of the Card world's will so she would not have attempted something like this in the first place if not for his partial immortality.

'Well, let us talk about the terms for our wager shall we,' The Field Marshal quickly changed the topic, as she did not want to continue talking about the incident. She knows she could get competitive but showing it against a child no matter how abnormal he was, it was embarrassing for her.

'Fine, let me make the new stakes clear. If you win, I will give up on the criminal rehabilitation program, embrace the title 'Hope of the South,' and become a part of your family. But if I win, not only will you support my criminal rehabilitation program but switch your alliance to me and swear your loyalty to me on your honor,' Wyatt let the Field Marshal change the topic because he was waiting for her to bring up the wager, to not seem eager. Then, he recounted the updated stakes for their wager to the Field Marshal, these stakes would only be valid if they managed to agree on an updated wager. If not they will go with old wager and stakes.

'Woah, hold up their buddy. Nobody agreed to swear their loyalty to you. My loyalty will always be with the Southern Ruler and the Southern Region,' the Field Marshal hurriedly corrected, swearing one's loyalty was not a small matter, especially for someone of the Field Marshal's status and personality. This was also why Wyatt didn't bother to ask her to sign a contract or take an oath.

'Besides, the stakes are not equal,' the Field Marshal added, feeling that Wyatt was getting the better end of the deal.

'How are they not equal? If anybody should be complaining then it should be me. Because I agreed to marry into your family. Do you even know what that means? If not, you can ask Lorenzo— Wait, that would not help my case since he traded up by

marrying into your family while I would be settling by marrying into your family,' In the heat of the moment, Wyatt was caught up in his own words.

'Boy, aren't you getting too comfortable with me? I asked you to drop the honorifics but don't remember asking you to treat me like one of your mates. And what the heck do you mean by Lorenzo traded up by marrying me? He and I are equal partners in this marriage,' The Field Marshal was starting to regret permitting Wyatt to stop being polite with her.

'Who are you kidding, Your Highness? Lorenzo is not here, you can drop the act,' Wyatt said using honorifics to sound polite but that only highlighted his rudeness.

'Listen to me, you brat. Lorenzo is a kind and brilliant man. At least, he knows to respect and listen to his elders,' The Field Marshal raged unable to control her emotions.

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 10:05

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

As one of the strongest in the Card World, the Field Marshal was enlightened and profound, detached from human emotions, or so she would like to think. Talking to Wyatt, she would always find herself getting in touch with her mortal side that would like to cover its helplessness with rage and such emotions. She wanted Wyatt to be comfortable around her but not overly comfortable. Not to mention, where does he get off belittling her husband to her?

'Your Highness, I don't understand. Why are you getting so defensive? I was just implying that you were the best thing that ever happened to Lorenzo,' Wyatt explained, feeling the Field Marshal's anger.

'We both know what you were implying brat, don't try to whitewash it now,' The Field Marshal was astounded seeing Wyatt imply that she was undermining Lorenzo, not him.

'I don't know what you are talking about but I feel—'

'Let us reduce the wager time limit by half. If you agree we have a wager at our hands,' The Field Marshal put forward her proposal for the updated wager interrupting Wyatt, as she did not want to continue listening to him find creative ways to undermine her husband just to provoke her into a wager.

'Does that mean you have agreed to the stakes I proposed?' Wyatt asked, feeling Field Marshal was trying to pull a fast one on him.

'I stand by what I said before. I have sworn my loyalty to the Southern region and its ruler. So, my loyalty is not up for stakes,' the Field Marshal declared.

'Then, I am afraid, we don't have a wager,' Wyatt decisively pulled the plug on the wager surprising the Field Marshal. After all, he had been pushing for this wager since the start but now seeing him pull the plug on it over a little disagreement without even trying to negotiate. It all seemed absurd to the Field Marshal as the involved party in the wager.

'Why call off the the wager? Unless you are afraid you will not be able to free Clown Mask in the next four hours?' the Field Marshal knew this wasn't it, yet she said to provoke Wyatt. After all, she wanted to enter the wager with Wyatt but not give him the stakes he asked for.

'Really?' Wyatt rolled his eyes knowing what the Field Marshal was doing, ignoring her he hovered above the crowd in stealth in his Rainbowfly monster form, scanning the crowd with his soul pupil searching for Gideon's hypnotized puppets. This was important to Wyatt because if he found Gideon's hypnotized puppets among the crowd, he had nothing to worry about as long as Gideon was only resorting to such petty tricks. But if he was not then, that was bad because it meant he was patiently planning something big and devious. Which meant Wyatt would have to be on guard for him and be prepared for it.

'Wyatt, you are being unreasonable here, my loyalty has always belonged to the Southern region and its ruler. It will continue to be so in the future too, until my last breath,' the Field Marshal's voice sounded in Wyatt's mind. She wanted him to agree to the updated wager. However, Wyatt nonchalantly replied, 'Good for you.' showing no interest in negotiating with her.

This led her to wonder if Wyatt really could not free Clown Mask in the next four hours. Otherwise, there was no reason for him to so decisively forgo the wager that he demanded in the first place. Wyatt wasn't even trying to negotiate the terms. It was as if he had given up.

'Wyatt, ask something less,' the Field Marshal now no longer cared about appearing too eager and losing the upper hand in the negotiation since Wyatt wasn't even willing to participate in a negotiation.

'Except for your loyalty, I think there isn't anything else you can provide me with, that would be worth me taking the risk of updating the wager and making it harder for me when I am sure to win it as it was,' Wyatt replied making his intention clear to the Field Marshal.

The only reason Wyatt went through the trouble convincing Field Marshal for an improved wager was because he wanted her loyalty, stealing her from Anna's mother. But since the Field Marshal was not willing to bet her loyalty, he saw no point in going through the trouble to update the wager.

However, seeing the fish was hooked, Wyatt decided to tempt his fate and see if he released the fish, would it jump right into his fish bucket?

Meaning, now that the Field Marshal was hooked on the idea of updating the existing wager enticed by the stakes he proposed to her, would she be willing to bet her loyalty just to see it through? Wyatt had no idea what the Field Marshal would do. But, gambling has brought out the worst in the best of us, so Wyatt believed anything was possible.

Was Wyatt investing in a sinking ship? Maybe, but he has no choice as the only reason he proposed to modify the existing wager was to steal Field Marshal from Anna's mother. So, he had little choice but to invest in what he believed would make it possible, no matter how large the odds stacked against them were.

'Aren't you presuming too hastily? I might be just a soldier but I have the backing of the Heatsend Royal family and the Lorn Family, the combined wealth, treasures, and knowledge of these two families are at my disposal. Name what you want and I will get it for you,' the Field Marshal generously offered, showing how much she wanted Wyatt to continue with the updated wager conditions that she had proposed to him. After all, the stakes he offered were too good for her to pass on.

'I want you, Your Highness, and nothing else. Haven't I made myself clear?'

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,073 words]

Chapter 1962 Trust

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 10:09

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

'Hey, brat. Your words are starting to touch the line of ambiguity. Watch it, or I don't mind thrashing you around until you learn to respect your elders,' The Field Marshal warned Wyatt feeling the ambiguous nature of his words could not be more apparent. First, he undermined her husband to her, and now this, if she did not know better she would think Wyatt was hitting on her.

'Wow, just wow, well it's good to know where your mind is at, Your Highness,' Wyatt indirectly said the Field Marshal's mind was in a gutter for her to even imply such a thing.

'Watch it,' the Field Marshal uttered, as she covered the Rainbowfly with her intent. Feeling a sense of dread Wyatt hurriedly said, 'Your Highness, I don't understand why are you so hesitant about swearing your loyalty to me when you not only want me to join your family but also become the hope of the South. If you don't trust me how can you be willing to welcome me into your family and entrust the Southern region to me? Isn't this baffling to you?'

Listening to the point put forward by Wyatt, the Field Marshal fell into a deep contemplation feeling that what he spoke had merit to it. If she was so eager to welcome him into her family and hand the future of the Southern region over to him, why was she so hesitant to the thought of swearing her loyalty to him? However, suddenly she shook her head and awakened from her contemplation. Then, staring intently at the Rainbowfly, she said, 'You are good. For a second I was almost considering it.'

'Your Highness, I was just stating the fact. Besides, since you strongly believed that I am the future of the Southern Region, why is it that you want to continue to serve the old regime that is failing to give the Southern Region and its people the prosperity they deserve? Why don't you consider switching your loyalty to me, the future that you believe in? By doing that you will be allowing me to uplift the Southern region to prosperity faster. Don't you think what I said is true and the best for the Southern region?' Wyatt stuck when the iron was hot. He believed the only reason the Field Marshal was having a hard time giving her loyalty to him was because she was being cautious around him.

Yes, one of the top ten strongest in the card world was being cautious around a card master realm teenager. Wyatt did not dare to credit himself for this, because it was not his doing but the doing of Anna's mother. It must have been her who had forced the Field Marshal's guard up against him. Otherwise, how come a person who was willing to welcome him to her family and also willing to hand over the Southern Region that she

defended by risking her life for most of her life to him was so wary about the idea of giving her loyalty to him?

Anna's mother was good, she had skillfully laid seeds of doubt in the Field Marshal's mind against Wyatt, such that she could never truly come to trust him. This may be because she saw how both her beloved daughter had fallen head over heels for him. Anna's rebellion was not new to her but to see Ann willing to bend a few rules for Wyatt, now that was a huge blow for Anna's mother because Ann's entire existence was built around pleasing her and winning her approval.

Now, seeing Ann go against the purpose of her very being for Wyatt, she felt threatened and challenged. She could not get around the fact that a nobody, who was nonexistent until recently, had managed to steal her daughters from her. Without knowing it Wyatt had already fired the first shot. Anna's mother was just trying to defend what's hers. Any mother in her position would do the same.

If Wyatt knew this, he would be speechless, and instantly conclude, 'Women are trouble.' Not that he would distance himself from Anna.

Meanwhile, the Field Marshal awakened from another long and complex contemplation, she would not understand the source of her caution towards Wyatt. But sticking to her gut she said, 'Wyatt, I don't want to talk about it. I have already told you my loyalty will always lie with the Southern Region and its ruler.'

'You don't but I do. Because it pains to know that you do not trust me after all I have done and been through for the Southern Region. Yes, I look out for my profits but I was also born and raised in the southern region, I am a Southerner by birth. Just like the rest of the Southerners, I am willing to risk my life for the Southern region. Have I not made it clear by now?' Wyatt asked the Field Marshal expressing his anguish knowing that Field Marshal would not trust him. He acted his part so well that even he felt he might have meant the words he spoke.

'Cut the crap, what is your point?' the Field Marshal said mercilessly. Feeling that Wyatt's words were starting to sway her mindset, she immediately got defensive. That was a natural reaction, after all, one would want to stick to their beliefs and protect them but only a very small group of people would keep their minds open and see the flaws in their beliefs and try to correct them. It wasn't surprising to see the Field Marshal was not part of that small group. But it was good to know that she was willing to contemplate them. Showing Wyatt a chunk in her armor.

'Your Highness, let me make this easier for you. Will you be willing to bet your loyalty if I promised that I will always keep the best interest of the Southern Region in my mind,' Wyatt said knowing that unless he assured the Field Marshal that he would not use her loyalty against the Southern Region and its people she would never be willing to bet her loyalty with him.

'What about the Southern Royal family?'

'What about them?'

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 10:13

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

'Boy, if this is your idea of a joke then let me warn you it is not funny. I will ignore it this once,' the Field Marshal warned Wyatt to watch his words.

'Your Highness, I wasn't joking and I stand by what I said,' Wyatt declared to the Field Marshal ignoring her warning.

However, an invisible pressure covered Wyatt's Rainbowfly body and he heard the Field Marshal say, 'Last chance.'

'Sigh~, Field Marshal, you know as well as I do, that the Southern region's future has no place for the Southern Royal family. Heck, the entire world's future doesn't have a place for the Royal families, Nobles, and the current government. Clown Mask's future vision is evidence of that.

The sooner the Southern Royal family understands it the better otherwise, sooner or later, they will face the same fate you saw in Clown Mask's future vision. If you think you can avoid it just because you know it then you are seriously mistaken.

If not for the three mischiefs then it would be someone else, maybe the Freedom Fighters. The world is starting to evolve and it has deemed the current regime unfit. It is your choice either be erased by natural selection or adapt to the change,' Wyatt addressed the Field Marshal by her military title instead of her royal status because he was serious this time.

The citizens of the Southern region respected the Southern Royal family, revered even, but it did not mean they did not have any complaints. Sooner or later public opinion and

anger would trump their loyalty and faith toward the Royal family. In Clown Mask's future vision, people came together under the banner of Hero Aba Windsor to overthrow the three mischiefs. That doesn't mean the people could not do the same to overthrow the current regime run by the central government and royal families. It was only a matter of time.

After the monsters, demons, and the supreme beings, the people finally achieved peace in their lives so they did not want to lose it by rocking the boat. This enabled the tranny of the central government and royal families to continue despite their obvious flaws and failures.

But once people felt that they had enough and deserved better, their freedom and prosperity were more important than the illusion of peace just like how they felt under the reign of three mischiefs in the Clown Mask's future vision, they would stand up against the current regime similar to how they stood up against the three mischiefs in the Clown Mask's vision. No matter how the Southern Royal family tried to avoid it, it would happen as this was how civilizations evolved.

The Field Marshal did not immediately lash out at Wyatt for bad-mouthing the Southern Royal family and its regime but she seriously contemplated Wyatt's words however, she failed to see a world without the royals to lead it. After all, the Royal families never imagined such a day would come even with the Central government trying to weaken and swallow them. Even in the Clown Mask's future vision, she was killed before she could witness the world hero Aba Windsor had created.

Since the Field Marshal could not imagine a world without the royal families, it was hard for her to understand what Wyatt trying to say. Knowing Wyatt was not some random teenager who would spout random nonsense she carefully listened to his words and tried to grasp their meaning after all she had seen the future of the Southern Royal family in the Clown Mask's future vision, they had been trying their best to think of ways to avoid it and they too felt that if the three mischiefs can achieve it then others can also do the same.

This was why the Field Marshal seriously pondered on Wyatt's words however no matter how hard she tried she could not fathom a world without royals leading it. She felt even if it was not the Heatsend royal family some other royal family would take its place but a world without any royal family felt absurd to her.

'Wyatt, don't do anything stupid. I promise you that I will arrange a meeting between you and Anna's mother without any of these games,' the Field Marshal said feeling she was not knowledgeable enough to have this talk with Wyatt.

'Field Marshal, I thought your loyalty was to the Southern region first and then its ruler,' Wyatt did not agree to the Field Marshal's request but reminded her, that she would be looking out the for people of the South rather than looking out for the Southern royal family.

'Wyatt, what is your point? Are you planning on overthrowing the Southern Royal family?' the Field Marshal asked Wyatt in a grave tone. She really would not mind breaching the contract between Wyatt and Anna if he gave her a wrong answer here.

'No, I would not dream of it. My ambitions do not lie in the card world, to begin with. But I am willing to help prosper it because of my sentiments,' Wyatt replied honestly. This might be the only sentence so far in his conversation with the Field Marshal without any deceit.

'What are you trying to say?' the Field Marshal asked in frustration, she was irritated that she could not understand a single thing the teenager said. She wondered if she was truly as profound as she thought she was.

'Give me your loyalty and I will take care of your worries,' Wyatt proposed to the Field Marshal.

'Popostrous, who do you think you are? How dare you make such big claims? You have gotten full of yourself. Without my protection you would have died long ago let alone you taking care of my concerns,' The Field Marshal yelled in a fit of rage. She truly felt Wyatt had gotten full of himself, especially with her forcing him to embrace the title 'Hope of the Southern region.'

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 10:17

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Wyatt was not surprised by the Field Marshal's reaction. Instead, ignoring her words, he continued to say, 'Field Marshal, these past few days, you have monitored and seen how I treat my friends, family, and employees. Still, I promise you, that if you give me your loyalty, I will do nothing unworthy of it.'

'You are mad, you are drunk on the fame my niece has been feeding you. You are just a teenager, please act like it before it's too late,' the Field Marshal said, now that she finally understood what Wyatt was trying to say all this time. He was showing her the

problems that she did not see and also the solutions to them that were beyond her. He revealed it all to her, saying, as long as he had her loyalty he would take care of it for her.

How could the Field Marshal miss Wyatt's true intention, she has been courted before, and right now Wyatt was doing the same. While she was thinking of the wager, that boy was trying to court her as one of his subordinates. Her mind was blown away by Wyatt's audacity.

Not only did he, a mere card master, dare to boldly try and recruit one of the top ten strongest in the world but he did not seem to worry about completing the wager which gave her a bad feeling. If she was not reading too much into things he was acting like he had already won.

'How?' the Field Marshal wondered in her mind and immediately contacted the facility and asked the personnel in charge of monitoring Clown Mask from up close for the next eight hours to check if the Clown Mask in front of them was the real one or not.

Receiving the confirmation from her people that the Clown Mask in the facility was indeed the real one and not a stand-in, Field Marshal felt that she was starting to get paranoid wound up by Wyatt's games. When actually, all she was doing was trying everything to not give heed to what Wyatt proposed to her. After all, what Wyatt proposed was too good to be true and absurd. How can a teenager be the answer to all her troubles? However, still, she felt a sense of urgency to conclude the wager as fast as possible which Wyatt was partially after.

'Field Marshal, you don't believe that. If I was just an ordinary teenager you would not leave your post at Way beyond and come to a third-rate city in the remote part of the Southern region to protect me.

Can an average teenager rescue a prisoner from the Southern region's most secured facility?

The question here is not if I can do what I claim but if you are willing to take a chance,' Wyatt did not let the Field Marshal just dismiss his proposal but asked her to give it a chance.

'You speak as if you have already rescued the Clown Mask,' the Field Marshal had a strong will and had long decided to ignore Wyatt's words as a devil's whisper. But just like how the best of us fall for the temptation of the devil. Field Marshal too was starting to fall for Wyatt's words. Because Wyatt spoke just the words her heart wanted to hear and promised everything she wanted.

'I will have rescued her by now if not for me holding back to win you over,' Wyatt said, not caring for the ambiguity in his words. He had become bolder the more the Field Marshal tried to ignore his words. The only reason she was trying so hard to ignore his

words was because they were working. She was tempted to shake Wyatt's hand on the stakes he sought.

'Oh, really, then you would not be worried if I were to decrease the time limit of the wager to an hour,' the Field Marshal asked, feeling Wyatt was being too overconfident.

'If you are willing to bet your loyalty, sure I don't mind giving it a try,' Wyatt said nonchalantly, not giving the Field Marshal a definite answer. Leaving her guessing.

'Okay, then if you are willing to reduce the time limit of the wager to an hour, then I am willing to bet my loyalty,' the Field Marshal joked, feeling that Wyatt was playing one of his mind tricks on her again.

'Sure, do we have a deal?' Wyatt agreed, shocking the Field Marshal who was only kidding around. She was dumbfounded, she did not understand what Wyatt was thinking by agreeing to something so absurd. However, unlike her Wyatt was laughing in his mind in satisfaction as the Field Marshal finally quote a price for her loyalty even if she was kidding.

'No— not an hour, reduce the time limit of the wager to half an hour, and then we have a deal,' the Field Marshal hurriedly corrected. She knew she was being shameless but she wanted to see how far Wyatt was willing to go.

Whenever people came to court the Field Marshal, they all came with the most luxurious gifts to shower her with, and the Field Marshal enabled them as she liked that part since it allowed her to gauge her value in the market. She was doing the same with Wyatt. However, she was always trying to figure out if Wyatt was being for real and learn his bottom line. She still had not given up on winning the wager. After all, she liked winning, especially when it looked like she was going to lose.

'You do know that you are asking me to orchestrate a prison break in one of the most secured facilities of the southern region that is inside a secret space a few thousand miles from here and not buy milk from the neighborhood store, right?' Wyatt asked the Field Marshal if it was alright for her to state such absurd condition.

'I thought you were holding back to win me over. Don't tell me you were just bragging,' the Field Marshal teased Wyatt. Then, she asked, 'Now you know what you need to do to get my loyalty, do we have a deal?'

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 10:17

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

'Field Marshal, are you being serious?' Wyatt did not agree to the Field Marshal immediately. Having seen how despicable and shameless the honorable Field Marshal could get when backed into a corner, he knew he had to make it so that she could not back out of her words.

'Yes, I am,' Field Marshal said with a mischievous tone wanting to hear Wyatt finally throw up his hand in the air and say he could not afford her loyalty.

Now this was the best part for the Field Marshal when being courted, the best of the best realizing that she was out of their league. She could not wait to hear Wyatt give up saying he could not complete the wager in half an hour. She thought it would be satisfying to watch him get off his high horses.

'Field Marshal is this final, are you sure there is no wiggle room for negotiation?' Wyatt asked, trying to confirm that if he agreed to the wager she would not back out.

'What the— Don't tell me you are considering it,' The Field Marshal was shocked to hear Wyatt consider her unreasonable demand.

Even if Wyatt employs the best teleportation card in the world it would be impossible for him to rescue Clown Mask in the next 30 minutes. After all, no abilities could be used in or in the immediate surroundings of the secret space housing the facility. Which means he would have to teleport further from it. Reaching it he would have to find a way to break into the facility, handle the guards, search for Clown Mask, and rescue her. Not even she could achieve that in under 30 minutes. So she did not understand where Wyatt was getting his confidence from.

'If that is the price of your loyalty then I have to because I want your loyalty. Doing everything to get what we want, isn't what all this struggle is for?' Wyatt asked the Field Marshal, only to hear her say, 'You are willing to risk everything doing the impossible and unreasonable, just to get my loyalty. You are crazy, do you know that?'

'So you agree what you demand is unreasonable and impossible,' Wyatt pointed out, enraging the Field Marshal. Who then, said, 'Fine, do whatever you want. Those are my terms for the update wagers for the stakes you proposed, take it or leave it.'

'Sigh~, I will take it,' Wyatt responded acting as if he got the short end of the stick.

The Field Marshal was no longer surprised just mad, she felt she could not trust any of Wyatt's words. Her niece warned her but she was only beginning to comprehend it now. She even went as far as to say, 'Let's make an oath so that neither of us can back out later.'

The Field Marshal knew Wyatt could not complete the wager in the stipulated time limit. Yet, seeing him agree to the updated wager anyway, she thought worse and proposed to take an oath to secure her winnings. Lowkey, she was even thinking that Wyatt might be doing this to marry into the Southern Royal family while saving some face.

How could such thought not cross her mind when she saw Wyatt, a mere card master, agree to do what was impossible even for her, one of the top ten strongest demigods? Anybody in her place would think the same. Agreed, Wyatt was not a normal card master but still, this was too much. Unless Wyatt could pull out a miracle from his ass he was going to lose this wager. Even a child with a little common sense would know this.

'Do we have to go that far between us?' Wyatt showed hesitance in taking an oath. Seeing this The Field Marshal sighed and said, 'I am sure, we do. Follow my lead, in the presence of the world I agree with the updated wager and stakes.'

'In the presence of the world, I agree with the updated wager and stakes,' Seeing that the Field Marshal took the oath without any reluctance, Wyatt smiled and also took the oath. The oath was straightforward with no deceit. Clearly, the Field Marshal did not want Wyatt to back out using a technicality.

'Good, now I will inform Anna of the good news that she is going to be a bride soon,' the Field Marshal said as soon as Wyatt took the oath. She wasn't trash-talking to Wyatt to throw him off his game. She genuinely felt that she had won the wager. It was also her way of calling him stupid.

'Oh, congrats. Who is the groom?' Wyatt asked, feeling pity for the Field Marshal who had no idea that she had sold her loyalty for pennies.

'Why you, of course, my dear Great-nephew-in-law,' the Field Marshal responded with glee. Wondering if Wyatt's delusion had grown to the point where he could not understand what she was obviously implying.

'If I were you I would check on your subordinates. Or they should be trying to reach you right about now,' Wyatt replied nonchalantly.

Having finally dealt with Field Marshal, Wyatt continued to scan the crowd for Gideon Grim's hypnotized puppet. He and the Hive AI had already scanned most of the crowd by now and were unable to find a single hypnotized puppet. Pretty soon they concluded that there wasn't a single hypnotized puppet in the crowd. Which was just bonkers.

This was starting to worry Wyatt. Because with so many hypnotized puppets at his disposal, Gideon Grim could spare a few to keep Wyatt on his toes but he did not. After all, Wyatt was his most hated enemy who foiled most of his plans and outed his existence to the card world. But unable to find a single of Gideon Grim's hypnotized puppets Wyatt was beginning to wonder if Gideon Grim's hypnotized puppets were purposeful in avoiding him.

This further intensified Wyatt's worry about Gideon Grim's revenge. He knew that with Gideon Grim's cautious nature, he would not strike until he was sure that he could kill his target and not get caught. Wyatt feared such an enemy the most because they would wait as long as required to achieve their revenge. Not to mention Gideon had already shown that he was not above using Wyatt's friends and family to get to him. This was why he had to prioritize this asshole of all the people that wanted to kill him. Even more so than the three mischiefs and Belphegor.

Then Wyatt's grimoire notified him of a call from Cortney, picking it up, he asked, "What is it?"

"Where did you go? The children are waiting for you. Do you want them to have breakfast when it's time for lunch," Cortney replied, there was a hint of blame in her voice.

"Gather everyone. I am done here, once I check the orphanage compound. I will be there," Wyatt informed as he headed toward the orphanage compound hanging up on Cortney.

Nearing the orphanage, Wyatt saw Debra had summoned her origin card and its army of undead to guard the compound efficiently. She had advanced into the peak Card Grandmaster realm and from the looks of it after a baptism the time restriction on her origin card's skill had been improved allowing her to summon her undead army more frequently and for longer periods. It seems the Fine Gold has not spared any effort to help her grow.

Most importantly, Debra Khan was able to develop so quickly mostly because she had accumulated a lot in the lower realm and once she got her hands on a Golden grimoire, her years of accumulation had given her a huge boost in her realm advancement. Wyatt felt a little good to know one of his clients was doing better in her life. Yes, Debra's current success was mostly because of her patience, hard work, and good judgment but he would like to believe that the origin card he created for her had paved the path for her.

While checking the compound of the orphanage, Wyatt noticed that enthusiasm in the eyes of his employees. Especially the kids from the Bright Lion Gang which had now transformed into a private security agency that provided security to almost three-fourths of the city's market. The only part of the market they did not have access to was the part that belonged to the city's top families who had their own private security force to take

care of their businesses. Still, they donate a small fortune for the development of the Bright Lion Security agency.

Wyatt also noticed the development and expansion of the orphanage planned by Diana and agreed by Cortney was actually well thought keeping the future of the orphanage in mind. However, Wyatt believed the orphanage lacked the staff to properly make use of and maintain these new additions to the orphanage's infrastructure.

If there were not enough responsible staff to guide the kids on how to make use of the new facilities being provided to them, then it would all be a waste of money and effort. He had to get started on the criminal rehabilitation and reintegration program. It will not only help him increase his defense against Gideon's hypnotized puppet army but also be a big help to society.

Unable to find a single hypnotized puppet or anything suspicious, Wyatt prepared to join the others for Breakfast but then he heard the voice of the Field Marshal in his head, asking, 'How did you do it?'

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 10:25

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

After being warned by Wyatt to check up on her subordinates managing the facility holding Clown Mask, the Field Marshal who lowkey thought that Wyatt was losing the wager on purpose to marry into the Southern Royal family while saving face, received a call from her head warden in charge of the personally monitoring Clown Mask.

Getting the head warden's call the Field Marshal's expression darkened, because he shouldn't be able to call her as he should be beside Clown Mask's holding cell personally monitoring her closely. This meant that he could not access soul energy to summon his grimoire and call her. For him to be calling her meant that he was no longer in the space containing the secret facility, but outside. She had personally head-hunted the warden and knew that he was not the type to disobey her direct order. Leaving only one possibility, Wyatt had pulled a miracle out of his ass.

Controlling her turbulent emotions, the Field Marshal answered the call only to hear the panicking warden say, "Your Highness, the prisoner, she— her body suddenly disintegrated into ash. I was watching her the whole time. Her soul energy was locked, she did not have anything on her person and was all alone in her cell. The facility was under lockdown the whole time. I even activated the emergency array but I could only watch as her body disintegrated and couldn't find any trace of the killer.

I am sorry Your Highness, I am sorry I let you down. The prison was impregnable for centuries but now under my watch, someone not only managed to infiltrate it but assassinate a prisoner and left without leaving behind a trace. I know nothing I say will make up for the blunder I have made but I promise we are doing everything to find the killer. I will not rest until we find the killer—"

"Don't bother, the culprit is right in front of my eyes and I don't think the prisoner is dead. You continue the search, but if you cannot find the prisoner in another half an hour. Then, my ignorance has disgraced your meritorious record. All I am saying is— this is not your fault—" the Field Marshal interrupted the Head Warden and tried to apologize to him but was immediately interrupted by him.

"Your Highness, please don't complete that sentence. Working for you has been my honor. You gave me an order and I could not fulfill it, please leave it at that. I promise we will turn the entire secret space upside down but find the prisoner or trace her down in the next half an hour. Please forgive my rudeness, I will soon contact you with the good news," the Head Warden was enraged that his idol was about to apologize to him. He would rather die than get an apology from her. Therefore, taking all the blame for the incident, in a fit of rage he promised the impossible.

This might have been a simple wager for Wyatt but the honor and lives of honest people were at the stake. The Head Warden was himself an accomplished card demigod, a realm blessed with amazing powers, but for the sake of the Southern region and because his idol asked him to, he forsook the luxurious life of a demigod and served as a warden in space where soul energy, rule power, nor divinity could be used. Spending hours in that place could turn a person crazy but he chose to stay there year around guarding the prisoners all for honor.

"Sigh~" the Field Marshal sighed as the Head warden hung up the call to return with good news. But she knew that was impossible. Shaking her head she looked at the time, it had only been a couple of minutes since she agreed to wager with Wyatt. Considering that the head Warden wasted a few minutes trying to comprehend what happened and contact the Field Marshal, it can be seen that Wyatt completed his wager the very minute the Field Marshal agreed to the wager.

As this dawned upon the Field Marshal, she understood what her niece had been warning her about had happened and it was too late for her to do anything about it but to submit to her fate. She had been tricked by Wyatt into giving him her loyalty for nothing in return.

The Field Marshal wondered how long Wyatt had been planning this because she did not believe Wyatt decided to enter a wager with her on a whim and pulled out a miracle from his ass. He must have been planning this for long even before he approached her with the wager. Then she recalled how the conversation started with Wyatt wanting to start a criminal rehabilitation program and it ended with her taking an oath to give her loyalty to him in a wager. No matter how many times she played events in her mind she could not fathom how it all pieced together so perfectly, similar to an architect building a skyscraper.

"Sigh~" the Field Marshal sighed unable to fathom what she was going to do now. She instinctively wanted to call her niece and inform her about the idiotic thing she did but then she realized her loyalty was now Wyatt's or did she have the time till the wager ends? Has the wager been concluded now that the Clown Mask was not in the facility? The Field Marshal's mind was in a mess. She did not know whether to get angry at Wyatt for tricking her or to get angry at herself for being stupid enough to fall for a teenager's trick.

However, once the initial sadness and confusion settled and the Field Marshal's mind was in order she did not regret anything. Even the fact that she took the initiative to take the oath that was now compelling her to hold up her promise. She knew what she was agreeing to, she did it out of her violation, and she was responsible for her choices. Resolving to her fate the Field Marshal contacted Wyatt, 'How did you do it?'

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 10:25

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

'How did I do it? Does it matter?' Wyatt asked the Field Marshal, not receiving a reply he shook his insect head and said, 'I will tell you later.'

'Fine, but show me Clown Mask so that I can conclude the wager and take responsibility for my foolishness,' the Field Marshal's voice did not have drive. To Wyatt, it felt like he was talking to Hive AI but not a living person. Understanding that Field Marshal must be

devastated by the turn of events, Wyatt nodded and said, 'Morph your appearance and join me for breakfast. Clown Mask will also be joining us there.'

'Sure,' The Field Marshal wanted to reject Wyatt's invitation but hearing Clown Mask would be there she decided to descend from the clouds for a change and check if it was truly Clown Mask who would be joining them from up close. Though she agreed she had lost the wager, without knowing how she lost there was a tiny shiver of hope in her heart that she still had hope of winning or annulling the wager as Wyatt might be resorting to some sort of trickery that he learned from the Dark Realm.

Having made sure the orphanage compound was clear of all threats using his soul pupils, Wyatt headed to the orphanage dining hall where everyone was waiting for him to join them for breakfast. Upon arrival, Wyatt scanned the crowd with his Soul pupils to make sure that none of them was hiding some surprise and only when he was sure that it was safe for him to reveal himself, Wyatt morphed into his original form with a causal attire on.

The causal attire that Wyatt was wearing was the product of his soul energy manipulation and myriad devil transformation skills. Wyatt has become proficient with these skills so much so that he can now control his soul energy to make soul energy constructs such as clothes and shoes. Then, to give them a human touch he would use the myriad devil transformation skills on them to morph them into regular clothes.

The Myriad Devil transformation allowed Wyatt to transform into animate or inanimate objects, the soul energy construct was a part of him so morphing them into regular clothes was within the limits of the Myriad Devil transformation skill.

"Wyatt!" Cortney exclaimed seeing Wyatt suddenly appear next to her when she was watching over Bloodette playing with the kids in using her clone while her real body was still in Cortney's innate blood-rule rune.

"Sorry, I got delayed. The kids had something to eat right," Wyatt apologized for the delay.

"Don't worry, they had chocolate milk as they waited for your arrival. Now that you are here we can commence with The Breakfast. But first I have to introduce you to the person who made all this possible," Cortney planned to introduce Wyatt to the orphanage Headmaster before they began breakfast.

Honestly, they had a welcome ceremony with kids' performance and everything planned and ready to welcome Wyatt to the orphanage but he came so late that they did not have the time for all that. Now at the least, Cortney could take this opportunity to introduce Wyatt to one of the most important people in her life, the orphanage headmaster.

However, just when Cortney was about to do that a plain-

looking old woman appeared behind Wyatt, causing her to ask in surprise, "Who is this?" It was the Field Marshal, she had taken Wyatt's advice to morph her appearance before joining him for breakfast. Before the Field Marshal or Wyatt could answer, chaos descended.

Seeing Wyatt suddenly appear out of thin air, the employees who were either playing with kids or talking with their colleagues immediately stopped what they were doing and then looked at Wyatt in reverence, some even bowed a little bit. Seeing the adults around them act odd, the kids paused and followed their line of sight to find Wyatt. Then the chaos ensued as they all rushed at him exclaiming, "Wyatt!"

Soon the crowd of kids surrounded Wyatt, Courtney tried her best to control the kids but none would heed her as in their minds she was one of them and not a grown-up. Seeing the mob of cute little children surrounding them without regard for their fellow kids, Wyatt was worried they would hurt themselves, so he mobilized this celestial force to gently carry all 178 of them into the air. Soon the dining hall was filled with floating kids gasping in shock which soon turned into laughter as they saw their friends floating around them like balloons.

178 would be a huge number for any orphanage back on earth but here it was not high besides the older kids had yet to join them.

While carefully floating the kids watching out for the ceiling, Wyatt monitored their hearts to ensure none was having a panic attack or something and were genuinely enjoying the lift.

"Wyatt, me too, me too," Bloodette rushed to Wyatt's side demanding him to lift her like the rest of the kids, feeling let out. Wyatt looked at her in confusion and asked, "Can't you fly?"

"This is just a clone, my abilities in this form are limited. Send me toward Daisy and Brian," Bloodette responded, instructing Wyatt to send her to her friends.

Recalling the two kids Bloodette was playing with earlier, Wyatt covered her clone with the celestial force and sent her next to them. Seeing the kids were enjoying the ride and had forgotten about him, he glanced around the room, surprised to find that the staff looked at the kids enviously. Wyatt shook his head not knowing whether to laugh or cry, only to hear the Field Marshal ask, "How are you doing it? How are you able to borrow the celestial force of the world with ease consider your realm?"

"Tell you what, make a list of things you want to ask me about, now that you are one of my own, I will answer them all. Trust me, Field Marshal Heatsend, I want my people to be the best. That is, prepare to become the strongest in the world."

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1968 Stealing From Anna's Mother

[1,118 words]

Chapter 1968 Stealing From Anna's Mother

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 10:29

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Though the Field Marshal was bound to give Wyatt her undying loyalty, he did not plan to treat her unfairly by getting her to work for him for nothing. Rather, he now planned to win her over completely by showing her what he was capable of. Besides, he had never treated his subordinates poorly.

Not to mention, Wyatt wanted to make the Field Marshal his trump card against any unforeseen foes. Especially, in the case of Belphegor and the seven princes of hell. They had invested all their wealth into invading the card world. Wyatt believed they would not hesitate to use any means to not only gain their investment but also the profit they dreamed of making through this venture.

Wyatt alone could not take on all seven princes of hell. Each one of them was as strong as Belphegor, Wyatt's rehabilitated criminal army could deal with their demon armies but he also needed to make sure that the card world had Card apprentices capable of facing the Seven Princes of hell head-on.

That was where the Field Marshal came into the picture. She had a lot of potential but was limited by the bounds of the card world. Had she been in the Dark Realm, Wyatt did not have any doubt the Field Marshal would have become a ruler class by now. Still, it was not too late, with proper resources and guidance she could grow stronger.

Not to mention, the Field Marshal was just the start of Wyatt's plan, with her by his side he was sure he could recruit more trustworthy demigods capable of becoming ruler class beings. After all, in a world where everything revolved around strength, once Field

Marshal proves herself as the strongest of all, many will gather around her to learn from her.

Was Wyatt not worried about getting betrayed? After all, unlike the tamed hearts of his calamity daughter gem, people's hearts especially strong card apprentices' hearts were fickle, there was no telling what they would do. Wyatt wasn't worried because he was just planning to employ them through oaths and contracts for a limited period not start a family.

Just a few years was all Wyatt needed them to buy for him, after that period his need for them would be obsolete. They were just tools and means for him to grow into his potential and achieve the chill life he has been dreaming of for two lifetimes now.

After the incident in the blood rule source, Wyatt was starting to understand that life was the biggest variable he could not control. The more he tried to control it the more it would spiral out of his hands. He felt if it continued like this regardless of his means his life would be cut short. So he decided instead to stop doing everything by himself and share the load. The only problem with that was he was the most knowledgeable and strongest in his circle. Which was when the Field Marshal made her appearance and showed him the way.

Honestly, Wyatt wasn't just stealing the Field Marshal from Anna's mother's side but stealing a page from Anna's mother's playbook. She had so many capable and trustworthy people at her disposal that she never had to show herself to control Wyatt. Colleen, Ann, and the Field Marshal were just a few examples without mentioning the royal family's ministers, guards, and the leaders of the Southern Watch.

Wyatt learned from her watching how she was able to control the entire southern region without actually ever taking the position of power. She was just a mere diplomate of the Southern region but she controlled everything in the Southern region. So much so that she made her incapable daughter the next heir to the Southern Throne while her musclehead Brother the rightful heir of the Southern Region did not even voice an opinion about it and spent most of his life at the Way beyond defending it. As if he were an exile.

Listening to Wyatt, the Field Marshal frowned, she felt he was too much. She did not believe Wyatt could make her strongest in the card. However, he was her liege now. She had to tolerate all his antics and shortcomings. Even if she was on guard for his perverted unique eyes she had no choice but to finally appear in front of him. If her lord demanded it, she had to follow through unless it sullied her honor.

"Wyatt, please put the kids down and follow me. I will introduce you to the Headmaster. She is with the older kids," Courtney requested.

Due to the mob outside and Wyatt's delay, all the preparations the orphanage had made to welcome the 'Hope of the South' went to waste. Now, the Headmaster had to work

twice as hard to clean up the mess. If not for the help of the Fine Gold employees and Bright Lion kids, it would be hard for the orphanage Headmaster to handle it all alone.

"Sure," Wyatt agreed and then informed her, "I wanted you to open the dungeon seal gate here. Someone else will also be joining us for the breakfast."

"Okay," Cortney nodded thinking Wyatt was talking about Susan. Heading out of the dining hall, Wyatt gently landed the kids on the floor and retrieved his celestial force.

Arriving in the hall, Cortney opened the gate to the dungeon seal. When Bloodette was within her innate rune she was able to use most of her abilities such as summoning the gate of the dungeon seal.

While Cortney waited for Susan to exit the dungeon seal, she saw a familiar figure with an unfamiliar face exit the gate. It was a woman with a graceful body and a bit taller and older than Cortney, herself. She looked like she was in her late twenties, meaning she at least had to be in her late thirties or early forties. Looking at the hideous scar on the woman's forehead, Cortney felt an innate sadness from deep within her soul. It was as if her soul was moaning at a loss.

"Wyatt, who is this?" Cortney asked, shock and sadness evident in her voice.

"How is this possible?" the Field Marshal exclaimed in shock. Even though she knew Wyatt had rescued Clown Mask from the secret facility, to see the Clown Mask appear in front of her a few minutes after agreeing to the wager was a huge shock to her.

...

[AN: Check out the reader's quest board in the author's thought section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 10:33

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Cortney had never seen her mother's face; she only knew her by her code name and the signature mask that accompanied it. It wasn't that Clown Mask wanted to conceal her face from her only daughter, but where there now was a hideous slit resembling a

scar, there once existed an empty eye socket that housed her Tao Eye until the Circle mercilessly plucked it out of her forehead.

The Clown Mask's third eye did not have eyelids as it was not a normal eye but more of an eyeball-shaped gem or jade. So when it was plucked it left a huge hole in her forehead. She had tried using medical methods to close the socket or regenerate what she lost but all seemed to be useless. Even Wyatt's Calamity Daughter Gem was not able to close that socket or regenerate her lost eye. Even its body reconstruction skill failed to help, at first Wyatt was puzzled by this but now when he learned about the world's will fragments Wyatt understood why even his calamity daughter gem was of no help in Clown Mask's case. It was because the Clown Mask's Tao eye, Cortney's Tao tongue, and Agent Forger's Miracle Eye were all made from the fragments of the world's will.

It was because the Supreme Leader had managed to get his hands on a world's will fragment that he was able to grow to the point that he ruled over three of the five regions in Clown Mask's future vision while the Matron limited herself to North and South regions, the two of most low performing regions of the five regions and the Emissary of Light limited himself to the Empire.

Having understood this Wyatt had Clown Mask use Myriad devil transform on her forehead, to create eyelids to cover the empty eye socket on her forehead, replacing it with a slit which now looked like a hideous scar to the onlookers. Anyhow now she was finally able to show her face to her loved one, Cortney, her only daughter. The reason she decided to struggle against the Supreme leader instead of escaping. Her choice that day made today possible.

"Mother!" Even without Wyatt answering her, Cortney finally guessed who the person in front of her was understanding where the sadness in her soul came from. It was her Tao Tongue physique which was crying seeing the missing Tao Eye.

Seeing Cortney recognize her even though she had never seen her true face Clown Mask was genuinely happy. An unconscious smile graced her lips. But the same was not true for Cortney, she sternly gazed at her mother and yelled at the person she believed to be her best friend after Bloodette, "Wyatt, what is the meaning of this?"

"Cortney, calm down," Diana and Cindy appeared with an elderly woman who asked agitated Cortney to calm down. Feeling the distress in Cortney, the clone Bloodette who was playing with kids, rushed into the hall to check on her.

"Headmaster, you do not know this woman and the worst she is capable of. Please, don't interfere and let me handle this," Cortney asked the Headmaster to stay out of her business only to hear the orphanage Headmaster say, "Cortney, you do not know your mother and the good she has been doing. Please, listen to what I have to say then you can decide for yourself whether to forgive your mother."

"Forgive her? Besides, what is she even doing here? Shouldn't she be locked away for everything she has done," Cortney found the headmaster's words absurd and then asked staring at Wyatt seeking answers to why Clown Mask walked out of the dungeon seal.

"Cortney, honey, first let me attend to our guest and give the kids their breakfast. Then we can sort this out. For my sake, just tolerate her for a few hours," the Orphanage Headmaster pleaded with Cortney asking her to tolerate Clown Mask's presence.

"Fine, I am only doing this for you and the kids," Cortney said, feeling a sense of Deja Vu recalling how she accepted her estranged mother Clown Mask as her master to use her money to help run the orphanage more properly. She sharply turned to Wyatt and said, "Wyatt, I thought we were best friends." Then, she headed to the dining hall in a fit of rage.

"I still think we are best friends," Wyatt replied, and Bloodette's clone added, "She and I, both think we are best friends." Only she knew the turmoil in Cortney's heart. So she tried her best to salvage the moment.

Wyatt nodded at Bloodette and then turned to face Clown Mask and said, "Don't worry. She will come around when she learns the truth."

Clown Mask nodded in understanding. She was capable of such natural thoughts and responses because she was one of the calamity daughter gems with the highest authority. Wyatt had to give her that much freedom such that she would not get caught when the Royal family interrogated her and copied her memories. Not to mention, calamity daughter gems had their own life, but they centered it around Wyatt's convenience. Making his safety, satisfaction, wishes, and demands their priority.

"Forgive my rudeness, Master Wyatt, I could not give you a proper welcome deserving of the 'Hope of the Southern Region,'" the orphanage headmaster apologized and began to bow but Wyatt hurriedly stopped her saying, "Senior, if anybody should be apologizing it should be me. My delay has caused you a lot of trouble. Please forgive me. And please do not stand on ceremony around me. I would prefer it if you treat me like one of the kids."

Seeing the orphanage headmaster was about to deny treating him as one of her kids, Wyatt looked into her eyes and said, "Please, it is my request."

"Fine, if you insist, I will do that. But, you still need to be treated with the proper respect as you represent the entire South."

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 10:37

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Seeing the orphanage headmaster continue to insist on giving Wyatt the proper respect that was deserving of the 'Hope of the South' the Field Marshal nodded in agreement having fully acknowledged her defeat and submitting her undying loyalty to Wyatt.

When she saw Wyatt bring the Clown Mask out of the dungeon seal, she did not believe it, but her unique eyes told her that the person she was seeing was indeed the real Clown Mask and not some duplicate that Wyatt arranged to dupe her. She could not fathom how the Clown Mask who was supposed to be locked away in a secret facility in a special space thousands of miles away would appear here in a few minutes.

After wrecking her brain to make sense of what she was observing for a few minutes, she gave up feeling utterly defeated. Unable to explain how she lost not to mention how she got roped into the bet the Field Marshal felt that Wyatt thoroughly defeated her. Hence a little of the reluctance she had in submitting her loyalty to Wyatt was erased but there was still a lot of it left however what could she do she took an oath with the world's will as the witness, she had no choice in this matter.

"Fine, Headmaster, please do as you see fit. After all, you are the host," Wyatt gave up, seeing how stubborn the Headmaster was about treating him with appropriate respect claiming that he represented the South.

"Don't worry child, as the host, I will not make my guest uncomfortable, but this is out of my hands. If it were up to me I would do as you say but it is not, your visit to the orphanage is a trending topic in the southern region not to mention I have to set an example for the kids after all they are not used to getting esteemed guests such as yourself," the orphanage Headmaster explained hoping it would help Wyatt understand why she was so insistent on treating him with appropriate respect and also so that this experience would not stop Wyatt from visiting the orphanage in the future.

"I understand," Wyatt nodded, deciding to follow the arrangement of the orphanage Headmaster for the breakfast. He was so cooperative with the Headmaster because, from the Clown Mask's future vision, Wyatt knew that she was not a simple mortal.

Not that the orphanage headmaster was a hidden expert or something, but she was an exceptional mortal. When the Matron took over the Southern Region overthrowing the

Southern Royal family, the economic state of the Southern region was in turmoil. Because of this a lot of families were thrown on the streets and the Southern Royal family they trusted was nowhere to be found, but a saintess arose during this time of crisis in the Southern region, Clara Cassidy, the current orphanage headmaster.

If Clown Mask had not illegally brought her out of her hometown to become the headmaster of the orphanage in the Sky Blossom City to take care of Cortney then, by now she would have started leading a charitable organization to help the needy around the Southern Region.

For a mortal to run such an organization would not be simple in this world where only the strong were respected however with the Southern Watch as her backer Clara would have no problem running the charitable organization.

After Colleen's death because of Matron's conspiracy for the Forsaken Treasure at the Way Beyond, inconsolable Anna goes on a journey retracing the footsteps of Colleen trying to be closer to her late grandmother. That was when she would run into Clara Cassidy, the last living descendant of Colleen's BFF.

When meeting Anna for the first time, Clara would be in her late sixties, unmarried, dedicating her entire life to a small charitable organization as a low-level employee pretty much similar to what she was now.

However, she had no idea that the charitable organization she was working for was a front for the City Lord's money laundering and tax evasion. Clara only becomes aware of this when Anna comes looking for her as Anna's arrival spooks the City Lord into doing stupid things.

Finding the truth about the charitable organization she was working for Clara felt like she was living a lie all this time and her heart was torn into two as even though the charitable organization was front for money laundering and tax evasion it was doing some good for the people by providing food and clothes for those that could not afford them. However, she could not be a part of a criminal organization.

Clara and Anna, both were going through their form of existential crisis. It was as if fate had brought them together to support each other through their tough time and climb out of the abyss together. They confided about their troubles with each other and helped each other overcome them.

With Anna's help, Clara was not only able to hold the City Lord accountable for his crimes, but she was also able to lead a bigger and better charitable organization. With Clara's help, Anna was able to deal with the loss of her grandmother and finally started taking the responsibility as the Southern Emperor seriously.

However, they both would meet a different ending. Anna would fall prey to Matron's conspiracy and foolishly invade the Northern Region to hold her father Gainover responsible for Colleen's death since he possessed the forsaken treasure.

Meanwhile, with the fall of the Southern Royal family and what remains of it going into hiding, Clara used the connection, reputation, and trust she had formed by leading the charitable organization supported and sponsored by the Southern Watch for years to gather funds and help those who had seen the worst of the regime change.

Clara's role doesn't end there. When the Hero Aba Windsor and her rebel Army Freedom Fighters come to free the Southern region from the tranny of the Matron, she uses the funds of the charitable organization to provide them with food and basic utilities.

Since the Saintess of the South was supporting the Hero Windsor, Aba was able to gain the trust and faith of the Southerners to overthrow the three mischiefs and form new government.

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 10:41

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Seeing how Clown Mask did not hesitate to mess with the future of someone destined to become the 'Saintess of the South' it was clear how much she cared about Cortney. If not for the burden of knowing what the future held, she might not have abandoned Cortney.

Despite the Clown Mask's inconsiderate manipulation of people, everything worked out fine. Because of Clown Mask's warning, Colleen did not fall for the conspiracy of the Matron, and as a result Anna never went on a journey to retrace the steps of Colleen to feel closer to her loving grandma. So she would never have found Clara Cassidy. Which meant that Clara would continue working as a low-level employee in a fake charitable organization without ever knowing the truth about it.

However, now that would not be the case. Clown Mask had changed her future and unknowingly brought her closer to people who could help her fulfill the destiny of becoming the Saintess of the South in place of Anna and Southern Watch: Wyatt and the Field Marshal.

The Field Marshal was fully aware of Clara Cassidy and the destiny she held thanks to the copied memories of the Clown Mask. This was why when the orphanage headmaster talked with Wyatt the Field Marshal paid close attention to her and agreed to them with a nod. She even felt that the orphanage Headmaster was nothing short of the image of her she saw in Clown Mask's memories of the future vision.

Field Marshal Heatsend found that Clara Cassidy was the embodiment of gentleness and patience. Unfortunately, she was a mortal and was closing her end. Utmost Clara had a good decade or two at her hands before she became unfit to continue doing what she was doing.

"Please forgive my rudeness, this is," After receiving a green light from Wyatt to do as she planned Clara turned to the disguised Field Marshal and greeted.

"Don't pay her any heed, she is just my guard. It would be best if you act as if she did not exist as it would be convenient for her to do her job that way," Wyatt said with a sly grin.

Wyatt's response caused the Field Marshal to mentally gush her teeth but on the surface, she remained indifferent. After all, she lost the proper moment to get in touch and form a casual connection with the person with the destiny to become the Saintess chosen by the people of the South. However, now that Wyatt had introduced her as a guard and asked Clara to ignore her so she could perform her duties properly, the Field Marshal could only play her role, as she couldn't let her actions prove the person to whom she had given loyalty to be a liar.

"So, will she not be joining us for breakfast?" Clara asked. Wyatt laughed and said, "She will be. She is a lot stronger than she looks. She can multitask, protect me while enjoying the breakfast with us."

"That's a relief," Clara nodded, not finding it odd that someone as important as Wyatt had a strong bodyguard. As a mortal, she had no sense of soul energy, but seeing the grace and elegance the Field Marshal held herself with, she believed her to be someone important and capable.

Soon following Clara Wyatt, Field Marshal, and the Clown Mask returned to the dinning hall. Where the older kids of the orphanage also arrived and joined the younger kids. Once everyone had arrived and taken a seat, Clara gave a small speech in honor of the Hope of the South.

Clara's speech was very sincere and moving, some employees were moved to tears. She certainly had a way with words otherwise she would not have managed to gather the required funds to run a charitable organization after the fall of the Southern Royal family and move the Southerner's hearts to the point where they deemed her as the Saintess of the South.

Clare kept her speech short being mindful of the time and asked Wyatt to speak a few words, putting Wyatt on the spot. Seeing this the Field Marshal snickered as without her doing anything her mission to get Wyatt to embrace the title 'Hope of the South' was being completed by Clara.

However to everyone's dismay when Wyatt got up to say a few encouraging words, he declared,

"I am not the hope of the South!

People who think a seventeen-year-old orphan can be the hope of the South are nothing but fools!

Let me tell you who the hope of the Southern region truly is!

It is you!

Yes, you!

You, you, you, and you! Each citizen of the South is the hope of the Southern region.

Any one person cannot be the hope of the Southern region!

Have you ever seen a house built using a single brick?

Have you ever seen a bridge built using a single beam?

So how can you think that a single person can be the hope of the Southern region?

Don't let the people misguide you!

These are the same people who said you will amount to nothing!

These are the same people who treat their fellow human beings even worse than animals!

These are the same people who would rather throw away the extra bread instead of taking time to give it to someone hungry!

What do these people know what the Southern region is and what it needs?

Let me tell you, what South needs!

It needs you!

They were wrong when they said you would not amount to anything!

They were wrong when they said you guys were just a number in the system!

I am telling you right now, you guys are the future of the Southern region!

You guys are the hope of the South!

You guys are the ones who will guide the South to a better tomorrow!

Now, answer me, who is the hope of the Southern region?"

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 10:46

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Ever since Wyatt was asked to take the stage, for the first time back on Earth, Wyatt had long gotten a feeling that he had no future as a motivational speaker. But receiving a graveyard silence in response to his 'You are the hope of the South' speech, Wyatt finally confirmed his guess.

"Who is the hope of the Southern Region?"

Wyatt repeated himself looking at the stagnate crowd, they all had awkward expressions on their faces, and once again he was answered with the sound of passing wind.

The kids, they— they were picking their nose. This was not the reaction he was expecting, no it was far from the reaction he was expecting. His gaze landed on the

adults in the dining hall, especially the Fine Gold employees who were supposed to be the ones who contributed the most, they had an expression of disappointment.

Laugh the Field Marshal let out a chuckle unable to hold back her laughter. Causing Wyatt's expression to darken. Turning to sternly stare at her, he yelled, "This is not a laughing matter."

Then, turning to the crowd, he glanced over at the older kids they were about a year or two younger than his physical body. That was, a year or two from becoming legal adult and losing their right to live in the orphanage. They had no hope on their face. Wyatt was not some ignorant person who did not know the difficulties of life these kids had seen, he had seen the worst and the best of humanity in his two lifetimes.

The crowd in front of him gave him a flashback of the time when everyone on Earth had given up on struggling for their freedom and decided to submit to the Viltronian.

"What have they done to you?"

Wyatt's eyes turned red, kids were supposed to be ignorant and naive believing in fables and miracles, but the ones in front of him seemed to have grown numb having seen and experienced the worst of life. Yes, he knows he was in an orphanage, but this was too— his genius brain could not find a word for it.

"Wyatt," Cortney uttered, planning to console her best friend. However, Clara Cassidy pulled her back. Cortney turned to look at the orphanage headmaster, seeing her shake her head, Cortney decided to trust her and stepped back.

"Wyatt, you done? Brain says he is hungry." Bloodette suddenly spoke from the crowd. She was sitting with friends, Daisy and Brain. The Eight or nine-year-olds were one of the few who were not afraid of her appearance and accepted her.

"..." Listening to her, Wyatt's expression darkened further.

"Son, why don't you warp it up?" Clara walked next to Wyatt asking him to finish his speech so that they could start serving the kids. After all, it was almost noon and the kids only had chocolate milk since morning.

"Haha Haha," Wyatt laughed, scaring the crowd, Diana, and Cindy. Then he turned to Field Marshal and said, "You win. But I will still do it my way."

Wyatt finally understood why Anna's mother wanted him to embrace the title 'Hope of the South' at the orphanage of all places. It was not for the orphans, it was for him. Wyatt might have stolen Field Marshal from her side but she still won.

"I would not prefer it any other way," the Field Marshal said with a gentle smile.

"Headmaster, I am sorry. I was not what you promised them," Wyatt apologized, and looking into her eyes he asked her, "I need your help to salvage the moment, would you please be my prop?"

"My pleasure, anything for the 'Hope of the South,'" Clara agreed with a sincere nod, like a soldier prepared to kill for her country.

Seeing this Wyatt's heart ached, this place was not Earth, here the monsters under the bed and in the closet were real and not some figment of imagination. So, here encouraging words were not enough, here fables of miracles were not enough.

"Headmaster, please swallow this pill," Wyatt said, handing a silver milk powder pill to Clara.

"Gulp." Clara swallowed the pill without hesitation. As soon as the pill touched her tongue it melted. Soon her body was brimming with an unknown power, this was a feeling Clara as a mortal had never felt. She closed her eyes and concentrated on it, trying to savor it while it lasted.

Noticing that the time was right, Wyatt summoned six pairs of floating arms and six floating heads, gaining a gasp from the crowd. The floating heads and arms moved from behind him and surrounded Clara. Seeing this, the Field Marshal, got up from her seat exclaiming, "Soul Energy Manipulation!"

Wyatt having a Soul energy manipulation skill was not news to the Field Marshal or the Southern royal family. But the extent of Wyatt's Soul energy manipulation proficiency came as a surprise to the Field Marshal, as she did not expect him to be able to use it to help elevate the active soul control percentage of a mortal. Now that was beyond anything she had imagined. It was even more surprising than seeing him create a casual attire from pure soul energy.

"Headmaster," Courtney uttered in panic seeing the sudden surge of soul power in the Headmaster. Such an amount of soul power was not something a mortal could handle. However, she noticed that the soul energy in the Headmaster was not trying to escape from her body instead it was enriching her soul, increasing its active soul control, which was nothing short of a miracle.

The silver milk powder pill that Wyatt had fed Clara was a high-

grade pill that would help a Card Lord with their active soul control percentage but for a mortal, it was a death sentence. However, with the combination of his otherworldly knowledge of Soul cultivation and his soul energy manipulation skill, Wyatt was going to achieve what was believed to be impossible in the Card World so far. He was going to give the people the miracle they desperately sought.

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 10:52

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

By the age of sixteen or seventeen most humans in the card world reach 10 percent active soul control and awaken as card apprentices but then there were a few who awaken faster than others and then there were those who awaken slower than the rest. However, as they continue to grow old over time sooner or later they will achieve the requirement of awakening, like in Susan's case.

But then there were mortals like Clara Cassidy, she was in her early sixties and her active soul control was still at four percent. Her chances of becoming a card apprentice in her entire lifetime were nonexistent. It took her sixty years to achieve four percent active soul control, that was like twelve and half years for one percent of active soul control. This meant she needed another seventy years to meet the requirements of awakening. Considering that the average life span of mortals was about eight to ninety years old, following the natural order of things Clara would never be able to awaken. It was never meant to be. It was best if she did not hold her breath on it.

However, Clara was about to awaken today, amidst the people she loved. Becoming the miracle they all sought.

Wyatt's six slave consciousnesses came together and concentrated, giving their all to precisely manipulate the soul energy in Clara's soul introduced by the high-grade silver milk powder pill. They accurately followed the soul cultivation knowledge sorted by the Hive AI to help enrich Clara's soul increasing her active soul energy control to not only meet the minimum requirement of awakening but also go further.

The large amount of soul energy introduced in Clara's soul was finally stabilized by Wyatt's six slave consciousnesses. Then they circulated it following the instructions of the Hive AI enriching Clara's soul slowly and stably increasing her active soul energy.

Soon Clara, herself, began to feel her active soul control elevate which was impossible unless one had achieved ten percent of active soul control minimum. It was thanks to the advanced soul-nurturing method Wyatt's slave consciousnesses were using to enrich her soul. When Clara awakens she was in for a lot of surprise. Because the

method used to awaken her was not simple and she stood to gain a lot of benefits from it.

4% >> 5% >> 6% >> ...>> 10%>> 11%>>...

Sensing Wyatt effortlessly manage to increase Clara's active soul control percentage to meet the requirement of awakening the already shocked Field Marshal was astounded, she felt as if she was dreaming. Noticing that Wyatt did not stop there but continued to increase Clara's active soul control further she felt her knees go weak and with a 'thud' she fell to her seat in utter disbelief. In the whole dining hall, only she knew what Wyatt was truly doing.

,,10%>> 11%>> ...>>18%>>19%

Bring Clara's active soul control to nineteen percent Wyatt stopped and asked his six soul consciousnesses to help Clara hold the access soul energy in her soul. As he had other plans for the remaining soul energy.

It was not surprising that there was still soul energy left after elevating Clara's active soul control to 19%. A high-grade pill was enough to help a Card Lord practice their active soul energy, the power contained in it was a lot, and the pill would prove deadly even for an average card master and card grandmaster if they consumed it carelessly.

"I think I can contract a grimoire now!" Surrounded by floating heads and arms, Clara exclaimed, opening her eyes. They were teary, as she could not believe she had awakened. Though she had given up on ever awakening, she always hoped that one day she too could awaken like the rest.

Wyatt nodded at her with a gentle smile. Then, he took out a silver grimoire and passed it to Clara saying, "Here, contract it."

Clara did not take the silver grimoire, instead, she looked at Wyatt and said, "It's a silver grimoire."

Even though Clara was a mortal till now, she had the basic knowledge of becoming a card apprentice. She knew only the talented ones could contract a silver grimoire after awakening but a late bloomer like her could contract the bronze grimoire.

"Trust me," Wyatt assured and pushed the grimoire into her hands.

Holding the Silver Grimoire in one hand Clara dropped a drop of her blood soul on its cover to initiate a soul contract with it, to her surprise as her blood came in contact with the grimoire, the grimoire shined brightly and started to hover in front of her as it slowly opened and revealing her status page to her.

"Impossible," multiple voices uttered together seeing Clara manage to contract a silver grimoire on her first try.

Not only that once Clara contracted the silver grimoire it helped her use the excess soul energy in her soul to increase the active soul control to 27%, helping her become a high-level card soldier in a single bound. Completing his job Wyatt recalled his floating arms and heads.

"I gained a trait, Soul sensitivity. I can feel the soul of everyone in the hall," Clara revealed to Wyatt aloud in shock.

"Soul Sensitivity!" Field Marshal exclaimed and rushed next to Clara, without her permission she checked Clara's grimoire to see if the trait Clara had received was the same as she was thinking of.

[Trait Name: Soul Sensitivity

Trait Type: Innate

Trait Effect: The user is sensitive to souls and their intent.]

"Impossible, how can a late bloomer have the potential to become a demigod?" the Field Marshal exclaimed aloud losing all her grace and elegance, that she had practiced and trained for centuries. Because, being able to sense the intent of other souls was something only demigods could do because of their intent sense. But Clara, a late bloomer, had awakened it as her innate trait. Proving that she had the potential to become a demigod.

The Field Marshal looked at Wyatt with complicated eyes, as he basically turned a lump of coal into the most precious diamond.

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 11:03

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Honestly, it wasn't Wyatt who gave Clara the soul sensitivity trait. It was her soul, her patient and understanding soul, that she had honed through decades of perseverance and benevolence, that had awakened the trait soul sensitivity. Yes, Wyatt did use an advanced soul cultivation method to enrich her soul but there was more at play here.

Even though mortals cannot feel their souls, their actions and choices affect and mold their souls. It was similar to how a scammer happens to be the most worried about being scammed, a thief happens to be most worried about someone stealing from them. Their actions and choices dedicate their mindset and heart.

Clara Cassidy might have been just a mortal but whenever a troubled soul came to her, she tried to understand their pain and help them to the best of her strength and knowledge. Sometimes she failed and sometimes she did okay, but she never stopped trying to help others. The kids of the orphanage were a living example of this.

The life she had led had helped Clara understand people, see through their complicated exteriors, and see them for who they really were. She would know a troubled soul when she saw one and a cry for help when she heard one. In a way, this helped her become more passionate about what she did. And this very skill she honed would allow her to become the 'Saintess of the South.'

All Wyatt and his advanced soul cultivation method did was help the skill Clara had honed to advance into her innate trait. That was to say if Clara's soul did not have that capability no matter what Wyatt did or how miraculous his advanced soul cultivation method was, she would not have received the Soul Sensitivity trait.

If one were to romanticize this, one could say that Clara Cassidy though a mortal, lived her life worthy of a demigod. She might not have been a demigod in terms of realm but her will had the quality of a demigod. She was the true demigod born by overcoming the test of life with the most brilliant grades.

"It is not me, it is her, she truly lives to her persona the Saintess of the South," Wyatt explained to the Field Marsha, who was staring at him as if she saw a ghost, pointing at Clara.

Clara no longer looked like a weak elderly woman, rather she looked like a woman in her early forties and still in her prime. If she had a few beauty cards equipped then, she could easily pass as a young woman in her late twenties. Becoming a Card soldier her physical body had undergone a visible metamorphosis. Not to mention, Clara who had lived a hard life from an early age had a very strong body for her age. With the boost from the soul energy, she had basically been rejuvenated, almost as if she had regained her youth.

Then, choosing to ignore the Field Marshal whose gaze kept switching between him and Clara, Wyatt removed a card from his card holder and passed it to Clara saying,

"This is one of the first few cards I created. I have upgraded it a few times since then, I want you to have it."

"C-rank Atlas bear spirit guard card, I can't take something so precious," Clara tried to return the card to Wyatt, but Wyatt shook his head and turned to look at the confused crowd who were trying to understand what just happened, and said, "Equip it and show them that miracles are possible as long as they persist. I don't have to teach you on that front do I."

The C-rank Atlas bear spirit guard card was none other than the upgraded form of the E-rank Abyssal giant bear spirit guard card Wyatt had created. Wyatt, back when he still had free time on his hands had upgraded the E-rank card because its star rating was too high (26 stars.) When he created this card he was still figuring out card creation and soul pupils. If he wanted to keep using it he needed to decrease its star rating. So, he had to upgrade it but with his current abilities, he had no need for it so he decided to gift it to Clara so she put it to good use. As a silver grimoire holder she could use C-rank cards.

[Card Name: Atlas Bear Spirit Guard

Card Type: Skill Card (passive)

Card Rank: C rank, Uncommon grade

Card Ratings : [4]stars

Card Durability : [100/100]

Card Effect: The user gains grandmaster level mastery in Beast form martial arts [Atlas Bear form].

Additional effect -

i) Atlas Bear Constitution (passive): The user's constitution will be granted the constitution of an Atlas bear. It will not alter the user's physical appearance in any way.

ii) Atlas Bear Senses (passive):The user's senses are augmented to that of Atlas Bear's senses.

iii) Atlas Bear Spirit Guard(passive): The user's aura takes the form of an Atlas Bear spirit. The Atlas Bear Spirit is sentient and will passively protect the user from all physical and spiritual attacks.

iv)Atlas Bear's Roar(passive): The user can roar like the Atlas Bear rendering all nearby enemies unconscious or stunning them for 1-3 seconds based on strength difference.

v) Innate Aura(passive):The user can choose to exert their aura on the surrounding units. The user's presence grows strong.]

"Don't worry child, I will restore their faith in the hope of the South," Saying that, Clara equipped the card and took the stage, Wyatt quietly faded into the background and returned to Cortney's side, who was still trying to comprehend what just happened.

Equipping the card, Clara's presence instantly became stronger and gained the attention of everyone in the dining hall. Soon her eyes became sharp and an apparition of a ginormous bear almost touching the hall ceiling covered her. Despite its giant and ferocious form, the Atlas Bear spirit guard did not appear threatening at all. Rather, it appeared benevolent, enlightened, and a little cute. Instantly gaining the interest of the little kids.

Wyatt guessed this was because the Atlas Bear spirit guard was made from Clara's aura which was the most compassionate aura Wyatt had ever come across. Having gained everyone's attention, Clara began to put an end to the crowds confusion and speculations by explaining what they had just witnessed.

...

[AN: Guys, this chapter is a little motivation for those trying for the Reader's quest. As for those who aren't aware, please check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 11:07

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"...silver milk powder can be procured in two. By buying from the local market and the other way as a subsidy. However, not everyone will be getting the subsidy. Only the meritorious citizens will get them. For example, students who are performing well in their school. This is just an example, there will be other ways for every citizen to obtain the subsidies. The Southern royal family will soon update all citizens of the South about this..."

Sliver milk powder, subsidy, meritorious citizens, what was Clara talking about?

It was not Clara who spoke this stuff but the Field Marshal Heatsend. Clara explained how Wyatt used a pill to help her become a card apprentice to the crowd and displayed her silver grimoire and powers to assure them that she was not lying, however, she had no idea what the pill Wyatt had fed her was so she could not answer when the older kids who were yet to awaken as card apprentice eagerly asked about the pill.

That was when the Field Marshal who dumbfoundedly stood in the middle of the stage trying to comprehend how a late bloomer like Clara had the potential to become a demigod came to her senses, took over the stage, and began to explain what pill was, how can they obtain it when they had no money to their name, what the Southern royal family was doing to make sure that everyone will receive the silver milk powder and not just the rich and powerful. Lastly, she did not forget to praise Wyatt who discovered such a miraculous powder and invented a way to mass produce it at the fastest speed. Helping everyone in the room understand why Wyatt was the hope of the Southern region.

Wyatt might not agree with this, but his speech 'You are the hope of the South' had seriously damaged his credibility as the 'Hope of the South.' The media and adults in these kids' lives talk so grandiosely about Wyatt and his achievements, but when they met him and heard him spouting nonsense that even three-year-olds would not believe, they felt if this was the 'Hope of the South' then they were doomed.

But seeing their mortal Headmaster who had no hope of becoming a card apprentice directly awakened as silver-grade card soldiers they were shocked and moved to the point of believing that miracles do exist. Most of them were worried that they would not be able to awaken before they became of legal age and would have to move out of the orphanage without proper arrangements.

Yes, the orphanage had many programs to help them integrate with society but they had seen where their seniors were and knew unless they became a card apprentice their future was bleak, they would be lucky to be alive a month after leaving the orphanage.

Now seeing the miraculous powder they heard so much about work with their own eyes they had a spark of hope in their heart that ignited into flame when the Field Marshal promised that the Southern Royal family was going to give silver milk powder subsidies to any and all meritorious citizens to ensure equal opportunities to all its citizens.

"Wyatt, who is this elderly lady? Can she guarantee what she is talking about? Does the Southern royal family really plan to provide the silver milk powder subsidies for its citizens?" Courtney suddenly asked Wyatt.

Courtney was happy that the orphanage master was a card soldier now and also happy to hear the promises made by the unknown elderly woman but she wanted to ensure that the elderly woman was not making false promises.

"Don't worry, if it's her saying that then, it will probably be true, even if it is not, she will make it true after all she is the Hero of the South," Wyatt answered assuring Cortney that every word the unknown elderly woman spoke was true.

"That's the Legendary Field Marshal Heatsend? No way, I have seen pictures of her, she isn't it," Clara who had returned to her seat said in disbelief listening to Wyatt. Even Diana and Cindy nodded, every one of them knew how the 'Hero of the South' looked like, her image was pasted all over the grimoire network.

"She has morphed her appearance to not attract any attention," Wyatt replied, and turning to Clara he said, "It's getting late you should start serving the kids they must be hungry." Diana finally knew why the Field Marshal had the time to contact her over something as trivial as Wyatt's visit to the orphanage.

"How could I do something so rude when the Hero of the South is doing her best to encourage the kids? Besides, these kids know how to deal with hunger, however, it is rare for them to be addressed by their Hero," Clara replied, but Wyatt shook his head and said, "She is too excited, if you leave her, she will keep talking till its time for dinner."

"Don't you dare disrespect my Hero, Wyatt," Cortney immediately warned Wyatt listening to him. It appeared she seemed to revere Field Marshal Heatsend which was a far cry from how she treated Colleen and Anna.

"Wyatt, did you know she single-handedly freed Mt. Claymore from a hundred Western demigods when they tried to illegally claim it as part of the Western region," Cortney said with fanatic light shining in her eyes.

"No, I did not," Wyatt finally understood what was happening here, the entire orphanage was a fan of Field Marshal because of Clara's weird fixation with her. This was apparent when she was willing to let the kids starve a little to hear the Field Marshal's encouraging words. As such he could no longer use the kids as reason so he turned to Clara and said, "Fine, I will be honest, I am hungry, feed me."

"Here have some chocolate milk and shut up," Cortney passed him her glass of milk and asked him to shut up.

"What the fuck, I don't want to drink your spit," Wyatt remarked.

"Suit yourself but just shut up." Cortney dismissed Wyatt without even bothering to spare him a glance.

"..." Wyatt was starting to regret having revealed Field Marshal's identity.

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 11:33

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"Don't worry, they will edit all the embarrassing stuff out, I guess," The Field Marshal said as she ate a sandwich sitting next to Wyatt. She was in a great mood for someone who lost her loyalty to a teenager in a wager at that.

"I could care less about that." Now that he had decided to embrace the title 'Hope of the South' Wyatt could not care what Anna's mother planned having the Field Marshal record and document his visit to the orphanage.

From Wyatt's perspective becoming the hope of the South meant he was declaring the South as his territory to the world and not that he was part of the Southern Royal family. The World leaders might not have grasped his intention at first, but Wyatt planned to make this clear to all with his actions. Back on the stage when he bombed his speech, Wyatt understood what he had missed and decided to adopt the Southern Region and soon the entire Card World.

"Wyatt, what's wrong with that girl? Why does she keep staring at me from time to time? Am I consuming too much food?" the Field Marshal asked, pointing at Cortney from the corner of her eyes while licking her fingers. She was so happy today that she decided to indulge in a little gluttony. Not to mention, it had been ages since she had consumed food so it felt a lot tastier to her.

"She wants your autograph but doesn't want to expose your identity. It must be killing her right now," Wyatt took joy in Cortney's misery recalling how she dismissed him when he was hungry.

"Some friend you are," the Field Marshal rolled her eyes at Wyatt and mentally informed Cortney to meet her later. After all, Cortney was the Tao Tongue, kind-hearted, and capable. It would not hurt the Field Marshal to get acquainted with the future pillar of the South early.

"Boss, if you may, we have gathered the employees who contributed the most to your various organizations in the gymnasium and would like you to meet them," Diana

gathered her courage and awkwardly informed Wyatt. Knowing that the Elderly woman next to her boss was the Hero of the South in disguise, she did not know how to act.

"They still want to meet me after hearing my speech," Wyatt asked, Diana laughed awkwardly and said, "Yes, if anything the speech made you appear more human to them. Let us expect it, your achievements are too godly to whoever has heard of them. People can't help but get overwhelmed. But seeing your naive humble side they are starting to see you for what you are a seventeen-year-old who chooses to see the best in everyone. Only someone like you will be willing to give criminals like us a second chance. I am sure the world will understand your ideology and accept it one day."

"Besides the speech wasn't that bad, it's just that you said it at the wrong time at the wrong place. If you had started with the silver milk powder miracle and ended it with that speech, then you would have been a huge hit," Diana added what she thought after a short pause.

"The girl makes a good point, I will ask the media people not to edit the speech out. Let the people see who you are and what you stand for. But for someone narcissistic, you are overly humble about your strength and what you are capable of, it doesn't add up," The Field Marshal said looking at Wyatt suspiciously wondering if Wyatt was up to something.

"I know you guys are only saying that to cheer me up but I will take it," Saying that Wyatt got up to follow Diana to the meet but before leaving he turned to the Field Marshal and said, "Please help me complete all the necessary procedures to start a criminal rehabilitation and reintegration program. I want to get started as soon as possible."

"Fine," The Field Marshal nodded and agreed with Wyatt without any question. After all, she had agreed to support Wyatt's idea of starting a criminal rehabilitation and reintegration program if she lost the wager.

As Wyatt followed Diana, he saw Clara taking Courtney and Clown Mask to her office. It seems Clara had decided it was time Courtney knew the whole truth about Clown Mask.

However, just as Wyatt was about to exit the dining hall, Bloodette stopped him saying, "I need silver milk powder and lots of it."

Wyatt looked at the kids that had followed Bloodette and said, "Bloodette, silver milk powder is a strong substance, it needs to be consumed with caution. If these kids consume it excessively they might explode from having too much silver milk powder in their system."

Diana also spoke assuring Bloodette, "Blood Supreme, this orphanage is now being sponsored by Master Wyatt. So when we get enough stock of silver milk powder we will

help each kid in the orphanage get their share under proper administration. So, please do not worry."

"No, we want it now. Our elder sister is going to turn sixteen in a week and she still has not awakened. She is too weak. If she leaves the orphanage she will not survive," A nine-year-old boy yelled at Diana. Wyatt recalled that the kid was Brain, one of Bloodette's friends.

"Boy, don't worry, if your elder sister has attended the reintegration program then she should have joined Fine Gold as a sales intern, she will be provided the necessary housing and incentives by our company to help her integrate with society," Diana patiently explained to the kids.

"My sister tried to attend the reintegration program but the staff rejected her saying she was not fit for the program," Brain revealed with rage visible in his eyes.

Wyatt was not surprised by Brain's frustration, at least this kid was showing some emotion, the kids during his speech were emotionless like lifeless dolls. However, he did order Diana, "Check if what the boy is saying is true." Then looking at the boy he said, "Brain, what is your Elder Sister's name?"

"Marcy, Marcy Davis."

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 11:39

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"Davis?" Wyatt uttered in surprise, recalling Ada Davis. The last time he saw her was during the Southern Capital incident. He heard that she vanished in the double-gate dungeon, apparently, the soldiers stationed there claimed that she had escaped to the demon realm but the City Lord of the double-gate dungeon city who was the last person to meet her refrained from making any comments.

'There can be different families with the same surname,' Wyatt thought. Then, shaking his head he looked at Brain and said, "If your sister is here, go call her I will see how I can help her." Any friends of Bloodette were his friends. Besides, their friendship was sincere and pure. Wyatt like that part a lot.

"Really?" Brain asked in disbelief, it appears he did not expect Wyatt and Diana to do anything. Yet, he came with Bloodette just to let his frustration be known.

"Yes," Wyatt nodded.

"Daisy, go call big sis Marcy, I will make sure he doesn't leave," Brain instructed his friend, who nodded with a firm expression and dashed out of the dining hall.

"Bloodette, you seem to make some good friends," Wyatt was happy for her. Clara was doing her best to keep the kids on the right path but there weren't many kids in the orphanage that still had some fight left in them let alone go out of their way to help their fellows. Daisy and Brain seemed to be special, no wonder they could accept Bloodette despite her appearance.

"Yes, but I am not so sure about Brain," Bloodette said making faces at Brain. Provoked he yelled back, "What did you say you walking hotdog?"

"Take it back or I will make you eat dirt again," Bloodette warned making a fist. Even though Bloodette's realm had decreased to that of a mortal. She was still more than what a nine-year-old would handle.

"Boss, I have talked to the person in charge of the orphanage's reintegration program. Marcy Davis's case is special, there wasn't much our people could do to help her. Over staff offered to recruit her in the special needs program considering her condition but she rejected it," Diana reported, having talked to her subordinates.

"You are lying, there is no way big sis Marcy would reject it," Brain yelled staring hard at Diana. Having been in Brain's shoes in the past Diana did not take offense to Brain's words.

"Brain, calm down, Wyatt will handle it. Trust me," Bloodette assured her friend. Since Wyatt had never let her down, she believed he would not let her friends down too.

"What sort of condition are we talking about here?" Wyatt asked wondering what kind of condition would stop a person from working a regular job. From what he gathered so far Marcy didn't sound to be disabled or mentally challenged.

Just then a cold wind filled the room and Brain yelled, "Big sis Marcy is here, she will prove that you are lying."

"Dark realm energy signature," Wyatt muttered in alert feeling that the cold wind was not simple.

"You noticed," Field Marshal said, having appeared next to Wyatt out of nowhere. Scaring, Brain, "Ah, old lady ghost."

Wyatt, Diana, and the Field Marshal ignored Brain and looked at the eerily thin and pale girl being led by Daisy. "Daisy, let me clean up first. I stink of sewer. People are eating in the dining hall."

"Big sis, just follow me quietly." It was a pathetic sight to behold, an almost sixteen-year-old girl being bossed and dragged by a nine-year-old girl.

"Field Marshal, is she in any way related to—"

"No need to guess she is a Davis family's sin," Field Marshal replied interrupting Wyatt.

"Hey, old lady, watch what you say about our big sister," Brain was prepared to fight with Field Marshal.

"Ssh, Brain, she is scary strong. If she attacks I can't help you," Bloodette hashed Brain and warned him to curb his anger a little.

"I not afraid of an old lady," Brain replied though he did so with some hesitation, as Bloodette was the strongest person he knew. If even she was afraid of the old lady, then he should behave but he cannot let anybody mock his sister.

"Brain, that is not the way to talk to your elders. How many times have I asked to watch your manners? Apologize to her now," Marcy who saw Brain arguing with a few adults hurried over. Hearing his rude words she reprimanded him and then turning to the Field Marshal, she repeatedly bowed and apologized, "Madam, he is just a kid. He doesn't mean it. Please forgive him this once."

Marcy had noticed the head of Fine Gold 'Diana Kieth' and the boy wonder 'Dalton Wyatt' next to the Elderly lady and guessed her status was not simple. This was why she did not bother to ask what happened or who was at fault here and pressed her brother to apologize. Orphans like them stood no chance against people with high status.

"Marcy, don't apologize to her, she was bad-mouthing you," Brain informed feeling wronged. After all, he stood up to defend his sister. Why was he getting scolded?

"Brain, shut up. Apologize now," Marcy stared threatenedly at Brain. Only to hear Field Marshal say, "No need dear, the boy did not do anything wrong. There seems to be a misunderstanding here, nothing more."

"Thank you, madam. You are too kind," Marcy bowed and thanked the Field Marshal, expressing her gratitude for generously forgiving her little brother.

"..." Listening to how softly the Field Marshal addressed Marcy, Wyatt frowned finding her attitude toward the Davis family's sin was wrong. Hold on, with the Field Marshal's strength she should have long noticed Marcy Davis's existence. Wyatt felt he was missing something here. Besides, didn't Anna slaughter the entire Davis family? How come people were popping up carrying the surname of the supposedly dead family?

"Marcy Davis, I am Diana Keith, we would like to talk about your reintegration program," Diana stepped forward, introducing herself, and she stretched her hand out to shake hands with Marcy as a courtesy on their first meeting.

However, March who instinctively extended her hand to shake Diana's hand hurriedly took it back and explained, "Please, don't misunderstand. I just returned from my part-time job cleaning the city sewers. I could not wash up afterward since the shower there was busted. Please, forgive me about the smell too."

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 11:45

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"Cleaning sewers, now I understand why you rejected the special needs program," Diana was impressed by Marcy's personality and continued to hold her hand out saying, "How long are you going to wait for a handshake? My arm is about to fall off from the pain."

"But," Marcy hesitated. However, looking into Diana's bright eyes that had no judgment but just respect for her, she extended her hand and shook Diana's hand.

Soon Marcy felt a refreshing force wash over her body, astonished she blurted, "Cleansing card!" Understanding that Diana had used a cleansing help her clean.

"You kids have it easy because of the new headmaster, back in my time, the city sewer used to be our secret base," Diana said with a bright smile, giving Marcy a firm handshake. Not that she was jealous of the orphan kids, she just shared a bit of her past in a not-that-sad way so that Marcy would be comfortable around her. Meanwhile, Wyatt and Field Marshal were having a mental conversation of their own.

'You look confused,' the Field Marshal mentally connected with Wyatt.

'Yes, I am. Didn't Anna kill everyone from the Davis family? Except for Ada whose existence was not known to her,' Wyatt held back from asking why the Field Marshal reacted so kindly to Marcy. He knew that kids weren't responsible for their parent's sins, but he was surprised to see that the Field Marshal who had been indifferent to other orphans acted warmly to Marcy.

'Wyatt, I thought you knew Anna better than to believe what the public says about her,' the Field Marshal's response made it sound as if Wyatt was at fault for jumping to conclusions.

'Cut the speech, I know for a fact that Anna slaughtered the entire Davis family because they were devil worshippers,' Wyatt had long looked into the Davis family because of Ada Davis who was targeting him because of Anna. Even if everything about the Davis family's demise was faked, Ada's hatred for the Southern Royal family couldn't be faked.

'Yes, everyone knows Anna slaughtered the entire Davis family but only those who were there with her truly know why she did what she did,' the Field Marshal replied saying there was more to the story about Anna slaughtering her father's second wife's family.

'What is it? I did not find anything suspicious in the confidential records about that incident,' Wyatt asked, wondering if Marcy was a friend or foe. He sincerely hoped it wasn't the latter because from what he had learned about Marcy so far he did not want to have to— let us not go there yet.

'Keeping the question of how you accessed the confidential records of the incident aside, what actually happened that day was not mentioned or recorded anywhere because Anna's mother did not want what the Davis family did to taint the names of everyone else who contributed and sacrificed to put an end to the reign of devil worshipers. Therefore, she decided to make Anna the villain of that story since Anna did go there that night with the intention of killing those who brought shame upon her mother and exiling the rest of the family using the fact they were devil worshipers as an excuse.

I will also refrain from going into gruesome details about that incident and just say what you need to know. The Davis family, aside from the fact that they were devil worshipers, were involved in many shady stuff far from human imagination. One of them was human experimentation.

During the demon invasion and the terror of demon worshippers, it was common for the strong to experiment on the weak. They were all doing everything they could to survive the invasion and then the devil worshippers. In a way, it produced many cards, elixirs, and arrays that people are enjoying today. I am not trying to justify what happened then, it is what it is.

However, the Davis family continued it even during the peaceful times. It is not a surprise considering they were devil worshipers but they crossed a line that no one had dared to cross, they were experimenting on cross-breeding humans with demons right in the artificial dungeon under their family castle.

No one had any idea about this until Anna surprised them with her visit. She learned they were trying to find a way for demons to contract grimoire, from ego gems and divinity.

Once our world had successfully managed to resist the demon invasion, it had become a hot topic in the dark realm and gathered a lot of attention. Many devils and demons grew interested in our power system and began contracting card apprentices. This gave rise to a period in our history where devil worshipers were rampant. But after numerous attempts and experimentation the devils and demons could not contract the grimoire nor form ego gems or divinity. So their interest quickly died. However, some did not give up and hired families like the Davis family to continue where they left.

All in all, the Davis family deserved what they got,' The Field Marshal got emotional and talked a lot but feeling Wyatt's gaze she cut it short. As someone who had participated in the war against devil worshipers Field Marshal was very ashamed about the existence of the Davis family who fooled them all.

'Where does Marcy fall into all of this? I don't see any demon blood in her, except she seems to be infected by some kind of pathogen that is found in the dark realm. Thankfully, it is not infectious,' Wyatt reminded the Field Marshal that she had gone off-topic.

'Though Anna massacred the Davis family, she set the people they were using for their experiment free despite her subordinates advising her against it. Her mother gave her an earful for that. Fortunately, to this day, there have been no cases of those people or the experiment done on them causing trouble. Marcy must be the descendant of those people but it is surprising that they took the Davis family surname,' the Field Marshal informed, she could not believe that the victims would take the surname of their captors.

'That must be because Marcy is a descendant of the Davis family,' Wyatt could tell this by comparing Marcy's soul record with Ada's soul record. Wyatt guessed this might be because Marcy's predecessors when in captivity might have been assaulted by the Davis family men.

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 11:48

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

'If not for the peculiar soul energy signature of the Davis Family Sins, I would not have known her identity. But that is not enough to tell that she is blood-related to the Davis family. How can you tell that?' The Field Marshal asked Wyatt after all, Wyatt wasn't even born when the Davis Family was exterminated so how can he tell their descendants apart?

'Add it to your list, I will tell all in time,' Wyatt dismissed the Field Marshal's question. He could have lied that it was related to a new blood rule meaning he had comprehended but he did not as the Field Marshal's eyes were unique though not as handy as his unique eyes, still unique enough to confirm if he had indeed comprehended such a blood rule meaning. Now that the Field Marshal had given him her undying loyalty he did not want to lie to her. But also being dismissive of her questions was also not preferable but he did promise to tell her the truth in time.

'So now that you know she is the Davis family's descendant, what are you going to do about it?' Wyatt asked changing the topic.

'Nothing. She has nothing to do with their crime. If anything she is one of their victims. I have been watching this girl for a while now, she is a tough one, and I plan to recruit her in my private army. Can you help her like you helped the orphanage headmaster?' the Field Marshal requested.

The Field Marshal wasn't lying, she had been watching Marcy, wondering when she would give up or die because of her stubbornness, but somehow every time she manages to pull through. Watching Marcy survive day after day the Field Marshal pondered if she did not know that she wasn't supposed to survive.

Otherwise, Marcy would not stubbornly stick to her values and reject Fine Gold's special needs program which would allow her to live the last few days of her life comfortably. The reason why the Davis family's experimented humans never caused trouble after being granted freedom by Anna was because they sooner or later succumbed to experiments done on them by the Davis family. However, seeing that Marcy would wake

up every day prepared to fight the life itself, the Field Marshal had grown overly fond of her. She was just waiting for Marcy to turn a legal adult before approaching her.

'If you just want to check if I can turn all mortals into card apprentices, then just say so. You do not have to make up such stories,' Wyatt said rolling his eyes at the Field Marshal's sneaky attempt to confirm her doubts.

'Can't it be both?' the Field Marshal retorted saying that she was interested in both Marcy and confirming Wyatt's abilities.

'Whatever, since it is a request from my most loyal elder, I will fulfill it,' Wyatt accepted the Field Marshal's request. Of the many things she asked of him this was something he agreed on. This way the Field Marshal will not be able to complain that Wyatt didn't do anything for her.

"Special needs program is for those that are unable to take care of themselves and not someone like me. I can fully take care of myself," Marcy continued to stubbornly reject the idea of being considered one among the special needs. Other orphans might have been happy to sit in a rent-free home and collect subsidies every month but not her she had something to prove.

"Girl, you look like staked bones waiting to be knocked down by the passing wind. But fine, if you do not want to be in the special needs program, suit yourself.

However, if you are willing to clean the city sewers then you would not mind being a janitor at the Fine Gold's tower right? Though it is a dead-end job with average pay, it comes with full medical insurance, housing allowance, and other benefits. It should be enough to get you the proper medical help that you desperately need.

Don't think I am doing this as a charity, I like your strong values and ethics. I want someone like you to be a part of our organization. So, do you accept the job?" Diana stopped persuading Marcy to make use of the benefits of the special needs program and offered a decent job better than cleaning city sewers. Not that she looked down on it but a sickly sixteen-

year-old girl cleaning sewers did not sit right with her.

"I accept, Madam Diana," Marcy hurriedly agreed to Diana's request and bowed expressing her gratitude.

However, just then Wyatt spoke, "Diana, you can't hire someone like her as a janitor."

"What? What did you say to my sister?" Brian was preparing to apologize to Diana and thank her for helping her sister, but listening to Wyatt he went berserk in rage. He rushed at Wyatt with the intent to fight to the death.

However, Marcy who was next to him hurriedly caught him and pressed him down with all her might. Because of her sickly physique, she struggled to hold down a nine-year-old. Nonetheless, Daisy who had been quietly following Brain and Bloodette the whole time, made full use of her small size, sneaked next to Wyatt, and kicked his shin while crying out loud attracting the attention of everyone in the dining hall.

Wyatt ignored the gaze from the masses and looked at weeping Daisy who continued to kick his shin while crying her lungs out. He wondered if crying was part of Daisy's strategy to not get hit in return. Anyway, it worked.

"Daisy! Stop kicking him," Marcy shouted fully aware of her sister's calculative side. However, she had her hands full with Brain so she was at her wit's end trying to think of a way to save Daisy.

However, to her and onlookers' surprise, Wyatt picked up Daisy in his arms, ignoring her struggle and cries, he laughed and said, "You are the smart one of the three, aren't you Daisy? So, stop it or I will hit your sister."

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 11:53

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Listening to Wyatt's threat, both Daisy and Brain stopped creating a ruckus. They were orphans, they were not afraid of sticks and stones, they dared to be brazen to get what they wanted. However, hearing Wyatt say he wouldn't hit them but their sister if they continued to do what they were doing, they both stopped even if Wyatt only made the threat to Daisy. Their sister was not strong like them, they worried that if she got hit she might die like their late friends.

Now that Brain was under control, Marcy turned to look at Daisy in Wyatt's arms and said, "Sir, I apologize for the kids. They are still small and figuring out the difference between right and wrong. Please kindly forgive them."

"I think they know the difference between right and wrong, they just don't care because they believe everything is forgiven because they are kids," Wyatt said looking into Daisy's eyes, carrying her in his arms. Daisy pretended to be pitiful and sobbed silently with teary red eyes. Staining her pink cheeks with tears.

"Sir, it is not like that, they are genuinely good kids—"

"Wyatt, stop it. You are making Daisy cry. I asked to help not make them cry," Bloodette interrupted Marcy and yelled at Wyatt.

Ignoring Bloodette's anger, Wyatt bent down and picked little Bloodette in his arms. Bloodette's clone had taken the form of little kids to play with them. Wyatt now carried an eight-year-old in each of his arms.

Ignoring the sobbing Daisy on his right and angry Bloodette on his left, Wyatt looked at Marcy and said, "Enough about the kids, let us talk about you. So, where was I? Yes, someone like you is overqualified to be a janitor. You have a unique power, it hasn't blossomed fully and is the leading cause of your deteriorating health condition. Fortunately, I know how to help it blossom properly and these kids brought you to me in time. If they had been slow by a day or two, even I could not be able to help you. Because even I cannot revive a dead person."

"I knew it, our sister was special," Brain exclaimed in excitement, and then turning to face the dining hall he yelled, "Suck on it, you suckers. You heard him. My sister is not sick or dying, she has yet to awaken her unique powers. She is you going to become the strongest card apprentices— uhm uhm uh mh."

Waking up from the stupor of learning about having unique power, Marcy hurriedly closed her brother's mouth. Then apologized to everyone in the dining hall, "I am sorry, I am sorry."

An unconscious smile graced Diana's lips, she was honestly shocked when Wyatt said Marcy was not fit for the janitor job. However, she knew her boss wasn't a shallow person and believed there was reason for what he said and patiently waited for him to explain it. And it was worth the wait.

"Mr Hope of the South, does my sister really have a unique power? Will you help her awaken it," Unlike Brain, Daisy double-

checked with Wyatt with hope-filled eyes. Looking into them Wyatt felt it was not a bad idea to help a few people on his way to achieving his chill life.

"Why should I tell you? You kicked me," Wyatt pretended to be angry with Daisy. Causing her to genuinely feel guilt. Then, she sincerely apologized to Wyatt, "Mister, I am sorry. I will do anything you want but don't hurt my sister because of me, okay?"

"Don't say such things otherwise people will misunderstand and call authorities on me," Wyatt said finding Daisy was scary. Shaking his head he answered her, "Your sister does have a unique power and I will see to it that she awakens it."

"See, Daisy, I told you Wyatt will help. He always helps me and Cortney," Bloodette anger toward Wyatt had cleared as he cleared the misunderstanding.

"Sir, is my condition really because of an unawakened power in my body?" Marcy asked Wyatt in disbelief even if she heard him say it twice. Who could blame her, she had lived with her condition as far as she could remember. Learning that there wasn't just a solution to her condition but it was a boon to her, she found it hard to believe it.

Wyatt lied. Marcy did not have any unique power. Instead, she was infected by a foreign pathogen from the Dark realm which was killing her slowly by feeding on her soul. This was the reason why despite hailing from a big Card apprentice family like the Davis family she had not awakened yet. If not for her being naturally talented in cultivating active soul control percentage, she would have been sucked dry by these pathogens.

However, with time, the number of pathogens in her body increased but her soul's active control percentage remained the same as it was being abused by the pathogens. With his soul pupils, Wyatt saw that in a week or two she would die unless some strong like the Field Marshal helped her cleanse the pathogens in her body. She cannot get rid of them but she can reduce their numbers prolonging Marcy's life by another year or two.

The only reason Wyatt lied about Marcy's condition was not because of orphaned kids but also because of the orphaned kids. Wyatt did not mind telling the hard truth to Marcy, Brian, and Daisy since he planned to help her but then he did not tell the truth because then every sick person would come to him asking him to cure them.

Yes, Wyatt did not mind occasionally helping people he met on his journey to achieving his dream of a chill life but that did not mean he would invite every troubled person in the world to come find him for a solution. If he did that then even a third life time would not be enough for him to solve those problems. Wyatt's priority was still the same, it never changed, and he was clear about it.

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 11:58

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"Yes, it is. But we need to find a quiet place to discuss your condition and possible solutions since it has gotten severe and needs to be dealt with immediately," Wyatt continued to lie in public but decided to tell Marcy the truth in private.

However, getting confirmation from Wyatt, Marcy suddenly broke into tears, puzzling the onlookers. Brain and Daisy did not know why their sister was crying and looked at her in concern. Soon, controlling her tears and emotions, Marcy replied, "Headmaster said that my mother suffered from a similar condition and ultimately succumbed to it. If only there was someone as knowledgeable and generous as you present back then maybe she would not have died."

Listening to Marcy the onlookers nodded in understanding. Most of them knew what she was talking about as they or their friends had suffered something similar. Though their condition was not as unique as Marcy's, even though the card world had a proven solution to their condition, no one was willing to give it to them for free. They were starting to understand what the 'Hope of South' was. Like Wyatt, even the Southerners were still figuring out what the title 'Hope of South' meant.

Anna's mother used Wyatt's achievements to justify his title 'Hope of South' to the general public by painting a better tomorrow. However, she never told them what a better tomorrow would be like. How the 'Hope of South' would lead them to it. Like every politician in history, Anna's mother just sold them a dream but never exactly told them how it was possible except for pointing out who was going to lead them there, the 'Hope of South.'

"Marcy, let us not waste time on what could have been and deal with the matter at hand. You heard Master Wyatt right, your condition is severe let us deal with it first," Diana spoke up, not bothering to console Marcy she asked her to stop looking back and continued forward. At least Marcy knew her mother did not abandon her and had a stable orphanage to grow in, Diana had neither.

"Yes, Madam Diana," Marcy nodded. Seeing Marcy pull herself together, Diana said, "Master Wyatt, let me lead you to a quiet place where you can discuss her condition and solutions."

"No, need. Lead us to the gymnasium. I can meet with the employees and talk with Marcy at the same time," Wyatt said planning to show his trusted employees another miracle.

Sometimes people did not need to be rewarded or recognized for their work, it was enough if they knew they were working for something bigger than themselves. That was what most of the employees wanted from Wyatt. They needed to know that their little struggle and sacrifice were part of something bigger and greater. They might not be able to become great but a part of them was part of something great. Just like how teachers and parents take pride in the achievements of their students and children.

Wyatt planned to use Marcy to give them that assurance. After all, the only way for what he had built to last beyond him or in his absence was if he could get his employees' help. Otherwise, everything Wyatt did and built would vanish with Wyatt. A Dynasty that could fall with its ruler can never be considered strong.

Not that Wyatt was preparing for things after his death, he was preparing for the time when he would take the battle to the Dark realm. He could only continue to fight in the Dark realm when he knew everything was alright back home. For that to be possible it was not enough that he trusted his people but his people should also trust him.

Today Anna's mother was set on making him 'Hope of the South' but come tomorrow if she were to make him 'Villain of the South' the public opinion should not bend with her but oppose her. That was what Wyatt was after now. He knew he could not control everyone's opinion but by doing little things like this he could ensure the opinion of those that were in his favor would continue to remain in his favor. Which could be enough to keep his dynasty strong even in his absence.

"Sure, Master Wyatt," Diana nodded. Then, Wyatt gently set Bloodette and Daisy down saying, "You guys go play without any worry. I promise I will help your sister get better."

Daisy and Bloodette nodded in understanding, but Brain yelled, "No, I want to come too." Only to be hit on the head by Daisy and dragged away by her. He struggled but Daisy was stronger. After all, despite her young age, Daisy already had achieved six percent active control. If she was fed a small dose of low-grade silver milk powder regularly then she might awaken before turning ten years old. She was very talented and would make a strong card apprentice unlike Brain, who had only one percent active control.

After the kids left Wyatt and Field Marshal followed Diana and Marcy to the gymnasium. As soon as they exited the dining hall, the children who were eating their fill were no longer interested in the food but engaged in a heated discussion about 'Hope of the South' and the silver milk powder subsidies. They all hoped that the Southern royal family would announce the silver milk powder subsidies as fast as possible. So that they had better chances of awakening as Card apprentices before they became legal adults and had to leave the orphanage.

Heading to the gymnasium, the Field Marshal spoke, 'I can't believe you are planning to use the poor girl as a prop.'

'Funny, considering how you are using this matter to get something from me. Speak, what is it?' Wyatt replied fully aware of the Field Marshal's intentions.

'Nothing, all I wanted to say was since you plan on using the girl as your prop do not cheap out in treating her condition,' the Field Marshal revealed. She was only seeking benefits for Marcy who had no idea that Wyatt was planning to use her.

'Have you ever seen me hold back in any project I have taken interest in?'

...

AN:

i) <ABDHYQUXLALXKVKHA> The first ten users to redeem the code get ten fp. You can find the redeem center at Profile-Redeem.

ii) Don't forget to check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 12:03

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Arriving at the gymnasium Wyatt found a few familiar figures such as Debra Khan, Dan Malvin (ex-leader of the former Great Eagle Gang), Kane Kaga, etc Wyatt said hello to and shook hands with all of them, as Cindy introduced them and their contributions to Wyatt one by one.

"Boss, this is Rob Fielding, he has the most contribution in helping our Fine Gold Branch into most cities in the Blossom District."

"Madam, you flatter me. If not for Boss's popularity and prestige, those stuck-up City lords and family leaders from second-tier cities would not even meet me. It was all Boss's doing I was only the messenger."

"Mr Fielding, you are too humble. Keep up the good work."

...

...

...

After a long line of Fine Gold employees, it was finally the turn of the kids from Bright Lion Security agency. Wyatt remembers seeing these kids during the city tournament or the Bright Lion gang's parties. They all used to dress like roadside ruffins or whatever they considered cool but now all of them were neatly dressed in black tuxedos and had a sense of professionalism to them. Wyatt felt that turning the Bright Lion gang into a security agency worked out for the best.

However, one among them these kids stood out. She was covered in bandages like a mummy except for her head & eyes and wearing a tuxedo above it. She looked like an anime character that Wyatt remembered seeing back on Earth. She also oozed a calm and authoritative aura like the anime character. The resemblance was uncanny. When it was her turn before Cindy could introduce her and her contributions to Wyatt, he stared into her eyes and praised, "That's a sick look, impressive."

However, the girl was flustered meeting Wyatt's eyes and listening to his praise. She began fidgeting, erasing the calm and authoritative aura she once had. Seeing this Cindy smiled mischievously and introduced her to Wyatt, "Boss, this is Aurelia Malvin. Your number one fan."

Listening to Cindy introduce Aurelia was Wyatt's number one, there were various groans among the Bright Lion Gang members expressing their disagreements with Cindy's statement. One of them, Kane Kage even fearlessly spoke up in protest, "Madam Cindy, I am boss's number one fan."

His remark ensued a series of protests, each claiming to be Wyatt's number one fan. It was total chaos, the once peaceful gymnasium was now noisier than a fish market. However, Aurelia who was fidgeting, sharply turned to face the crowd and yelled, "Silence!"

Listening to it everyone immediately went silent and her voice echoed in the gymnasium. She was no longer a shy girl facing her idol but a lioness commanding her pride. As her gaze swept through the members of the bright lion gang everyone looked away not daring to lock eyes with her. Even Dan Malvin and Kane Kaga did not dare to stand against Aurelia.

Seeing that Kane Kaga who had Ivy a summon-type origin card created by Wyatt himself did not dare to go against Aurelia, Wyatt was surprised. What surprised him even more was that Kane's summons Ivy did not come out to confront Aurelia when the latter was challenging her master openly.

"Kane, what's wrong with Ivy?" Wyatt asked in concern seeing she did not come out to defend him. After all, Kane's origin card was overpowered for his realm, he found it hard

to believe that Ivy was afraid of Aurelia. So much so that she did not come out to protect her master. As far as Wyatt remembered Ivy was sentient and very loyal, something like fear should not be able to hold her back. As the creator of Ivy, Wyatt was willing to stake his name to guarantee that Ivy would definitely come out to protect Kane in any circumstance.

"Ivy— she lost to Aurelia. She was killed in the battle and is still recovering in my grimoire. I am sorry boss, we let you down," Kane apologized.

Meanwhile, seeing Wyatt inquire about Kane's summons, Aurelia hurriedly came forward to explain, "I did not mean to kill her but she was too weak."

Her words did not help explain anything but only made things worse, Kane and the other members of the Bright Lion gang stared at her but none dared to talk back to her. Dan, who had been silent so far immediately came forward and apologized to Wyatt, "Boss, forgive my cousin, she did not mean any disrespect. She is just too straightforward and does not have basic social maturity."

"So, she is your relative. Is she from out of town?" Wyatt said recalling both Dan and Aurelia shared the same surname. And also that if the City had someone as strong as Aurelia then why did she not participate in the city tournament?

"Yes, Boss. She moved here when she heard about you and since then she has been doing her best for the gang," Dan explained only to hear Aurelia warn him, "Dan, stop calling us a gang we are a private security agency."

"Boss, you see what I mean," Dan said helplessly.

"I see," Wyatt nodded and stared at Aurelia and used his soul pupils on her to check if she was truly strong enough to defeat Ivy.

To his surprise he found that Aurelia wasn't strong at all instead she was the weakest among all the members of the Bright Lion members. Her talent for active soul control was also subpar and she had just recently entered the Card Master realm. However, she had a very sturdy physique. So, Wyatt asked her, "Aurelia, do you possess a physique?"

Listening to Wyatt the members who were staring at Aurelia out of rivalry, looked at her in pity. Even Dan and Cindy looked at Aurelia in pity. However, Aurelia replied with a confident smile, "Yes, Boss. I do."

...

AN:

i) <ABDHYQUXLALXKVKHA> The first ten users to redeem the code get ten fp. You can find the redeem center at Profile-Redeem.

ii) Don't forget to check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 12:12

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Looking at the sudden turn in the expression of the members, Wyatt frowned. Then, he used his soul pupil to gather more information on Aurelia's physique. Learning in-depth about her physique, he uttered, "Oh, I see. These bandages are not a fashion statement but to make up for your physique's shortcoming."

Listening to Wyatt the members turned to look at Cindy to see if she informed their boss about Aurelia's condition but Cindy shook her head denying it. This surprised the members, they heard that their boss had perceptive eyes but this was just godly. They knew for a fact this was the first Wyatt was meeting Aurelia, so how did their boss learn about her condition, if not from Cindy?

"Malvin, by chance are you the direct descendent of Dan Malvin from the border city?" Field Marshal asked Aurelia, as her unique eyes felt a familiarity from Aurelia's physique.

"Yes, senior. You are?" Aurelia nodded, her cousin was named after her great-grandfather.

"An acquaintance of your ancestor," the Field Marshal vaguely replied and then mentally requested Wyatt, 'Wyatt, see if you can help this girl. The southern region owes a lot to her ancestor.'

'That is not of concern to me and what makes you think I can help her?' Wyatt rejected the Field Marshal's request ruthlessly. Later, he added, 'She is my subordinate, and her well-being is my duty. That is the only reason I will be helping her.'

'There you go again? What difference does it make when you are going to help her anyway?' the Field Marshal hated this part of Wyatt that clung to doing this his way.

Wyatt did not bother to respond to the Field Marshal, ignoring her he turned to Aurelia who was hesitating to inquire about her ancestor to the elderly lady next to him, and said, "Don't feel shy, you can talk to her about your ancestor after the meet. But for now, let us focus on you. It is impressive that you could defeat a peak card grandmaster with a strong summon-type origin card when you have recently entered the card master realm not to mention the quirks of your physique."

"It was nothing compared to what you did Boss. I too hope to one day grow strong enough to defeat a devil in the card master realm," Aurelia brazenly revealed her goal.

"Wait, do you mean you plan to stay in the card master realm until you grow strong enough to defeat a devil?" Wyatt asked Aurelia in disbelief. If it was someone else he would not ask something so silly but based on what he had gathered about Aurelia's personality he felt she might have meant what she said.

"Yes, Boss," Aurelia exclaimed, and turning to her cousin she remarked, "See, I told you boss would understand me."

"No you dumb girl, can't you tell from his expression— sigh, think whatever you want to think, I don't want to ruin my mood explaining it," Dan said giving up on his cousin.

"Aurelia, to be honest, in my current realm I borrowed power from various taboo skills to defeat the devil and it came with a heavy price, which I am still paying. What I am trying to say is there is a lot of room for you to grow in your current realm but it is not enough to confront the devil. I have no right to stop you from pursuing your dreams and goals. All I can say is don't waste too much time figuring things out," Wyatt did not encourage Aurelia nor did he discourage her because he could not bring himself to do so noticing the signs of her hard work and dedication engraved on her body as scars and wounds.

The reason why Aurelia a novice card master could kill Ivy a peak card grandmaster realm summons created by Wyatt was because she was a martial card apprentice. A card apprentice that focuses on martial arts cards over skill, summons, and other type of cards.

Aurelia was no martial arts genius like Laura Hill who had the sword salve physique but Aurelia was able to achieve a maximum of grandmaster level mastery in various body reinforcement martial arts thanks to her hard work, perseverance, and with a little help from her quirky physique.

When Wyatt learned this, he realized that the bandages covering Aurelia's entire body under the tuxedo were not a fashion statement but an attempt to hide her severely bruised body. Because of her quirky physique's nature, Wyatt could not make out the bruises on her body the first time he used his soul pupils on her.

"I knew it, you would support me, boss," Aurelia only heard what she wanted to hear. Meaning she interpreted Wyatt's words to her mindset. Listening to her, Wyatt and the members of the Bright Lion gang could only shake their heads.

Then, Wyatt pointed at Marcy and said, "Anyways Aurelia, you are in luck that I found her. The thing killing her is an answer to fixing your quirky physique."

"Boss, do you mean to say that if catch the scum trying to kill her I can fix my quirky physique?" Aurelia asked Wyatt enthusiastically. Keeping the fact that he did not say that aside, Wyatt wondered how could make Aurelia believe that her quirky physique could be fixed by catching an assassin just because he said so. For goodness sake, he was a researcher, not a fortune teller.

Wyatt then turned to Kane and said, "You lost to her despite having Ivy to aid you in combat? One does not even need to lift their fists, just words are enough to defeat this airhead and none of you guys could do that?"

Wyatt then glanced over the other members of the Bright Lions. Disappointed over the fact that after his calamity daughter cores and Corey, Aurelia was strongest in the entire Bright Lion Security Agency. He believed that someone with little brains could fool her into admitting defeat. Real combat wasn't just about whose fist was bigger, it involved presence of mind, strategizing, and judgment.

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 12:18

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Kane and other members hung their heads in shame. As for Aurelia, she had a foolish smile on her face as she said, "Boss, I feel like you are calling me a fool."

"I am," Wyatt said with an indifferent expression, only someone slow-minded like her would be willing to go through the excruciating pain to practice body reinforcement martial arts, especially with her quirky physique.

"Is this why mom said that we should not meet our heroes?" Aurelia did not say it as a retort to Wyatt. She was genuinely hurt that Wyatt would call her a fool and recalled the words her mother used to stop her from leaving the home and coming to Sky Blossom City.

"Don't worry, you are my fool so I will not treat you badly," Wyatt said to console Aurelia, he never had come across a person who was so honest maybe Aba could give her some competition.

"Thank you, boss," Aurelia instantly cheered up seeing Wyatt accept her. Though she was hurt that Wyatt considered her a fool but unlike others he said it to her face and not behind her back. This made her recall something else her mother said, 'Some people are rough on the outside only because they are trying to hide their shyness under it.'

Listening to Aurelia, shaking his head Wyatt turned to look at Marcy, and said, "I will be honest with you. I lied to you when I said you have an unawakened unique ability that is making your condition worse. Don't ask me why I lied but rest assured I do have the solution for your condition and plan to treat you as I promised to your siblings."

"Master Wyatt that is good enough for me," Marcy did not question Wyatt and just went along with what he said. After all, she was not paying Wyatt, he was going out of his way to help her. So, she had no complaints or demands.

Wyatt nodded and then turning to Aurelia he said, "I can help you fix your quirky physique and help you become stronger but not enough to defeat the devil in card master. Are you willing to give it a try?"

"I will agree to anything you ask, boss," Aurelia agreed without hesitation. Listening to his cousin's reply Dan exaggeratedly slapped his forehead.

Wyatt turned to look at Cindy, who hurriedly replied, "Boss, leave her basic social education to me."

"Nooo! No, I am not studying anything," Listening to Cindy, Aurelia jumped in fright like a vampire exposed to sunlight. Kane and other members snickered at her misery.

Ignoring Aurelia, Wyatt signaled Marcy to come over. As she neared him, he swiftly and painlessly pricked her extracting a drop of her blood. Summoning his grimoire, Wyatt used her drop of blood to create a one-time-use blood curse substitute card for Marcy which the employees of the Fine Gold and Members of Bright Lion watched keenly.

After creating the substitute card, Wyatt informed Marcy, "You see your predecessors were used in a heinous human experimentation by devil worshippers. In your predecessor's case, they forcefully introduced various kinds of pathogens that are available in the demon realm to see if humans could gain a similar physique as demons.

Fortunately for your predecessor, the pathogens died unable to survive in an unknown environment and unknown host.

However, unfortunately, one species of pathogen of all the various pathogens survived, not only did it survive but it found a way to thrive in your predecessor's body. It was only able to thrive in your predecessor's body because of their incredible talent for active soul control. This is also why the pathogen never chose to be transmitted to other humans. After all, people with a talent similar to your predecessor are very rare. If they moved to other humans they would die with them.

But the pathogens found other ways to prolong their survival, that was through your predecessor's descendant. The pathogens could not control the talent of other humans to ensure their survival but they could ensure the talent of your predecessor's descendant. By carrying your predecessor's talent to his descendants during impregnation.

By doing so they ensured your predecessor had a lineage of talented descendants but your predecessor's descendants were never able to rise to a better fate because they were all plagued by pathogens and doomed from birth just like you are. The reason I am telling you this is because I thought you would like to know about your family history. Though it is tragic it is your family history. Now let me put an end to that tragic story with a happy ending."

Then, Wyatt summoned nine floating heads and nine pairs of arms. They moved from Wyatt's behind and surrounded Marcy. Seeing this she did not panicking having decided to trust Wyatt. Soon Wyatt's slave consciousnesses mobilized their spiritual energy and used soul energy vibration to form a bridge between Marcy and her blood curse substitute card. Similar to a placenta.

Then, Wyatt introduced an abundant quantity of high-quality refined soul energy in the blood curse substitute card. Sensing the refined soul energy, the pathogens in Marcy's body rushed into the blood curse substitute of Marcy without suspecting anything.

Later Wyatt and his soul consciousness used their spiritual energy to force the remaining pathogens in Marcy's body into the blood curse substitute card. Wyatt used his soul pupils to scan Marcy's body and soul repeatedly to make sure that there were no more pathogens left in her body. Only when he was sure that he had collected all the pathogens and their spores infested in Marcy's body into her blood curse substitute card did he stop.

As the pathogens left her body Marcy felt like a huge shackle around her soul was lifted and her soul was freed. With the talent she inherited from her ancestors, she immediately felt better. As if she was reborn.

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 12:34

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Removing the pathogens infesting Marcy's body was not an easy task since their spore had infested her ovaries. The pathogens had morphed Marcy's body to their needs. Transferring from one generation to another they had perfected their methods and in a way evolved themselves to Marcy's lineage. They were no longer the same as the pathogens that were first introduced in Marcy's predecessors. Therefore, if these pathogens were released in their original habitat they will have a hard time adapting and might not survive.

Originally Marcy's body looked sickly as if she would die anytime yet in such a state she would work hard to clean city sewers exhausting her body. However, despite all this her body never collapsed because of the pathogens. After all, Marcy's body was the hive of these pathogens, so whenever their hive neared they would repair it to bare minimum.

Unlike bees and other beings that build, protect, maintain, and repair their hive life long, the pathogens only act when the situation turns desperate and they do not even see it to the end but would do only the bare minimum. The pathogens only cared about maintaining her body till they could move on to her descendants.

However, the pathogens seemed to be unaware that because of their predatory actions, their food source, Marcy's soul, was near exhaustion after being abused for over a decade and a half. So even if they barely kept her body from collapsing, the soul running it was about to extinguish. That was, Marcy was about to die without reproducing which meant with her demise the pathogens would also meet their end.

Usually, to avoid such situations pathogens would have a failsafe to force their host to reproduce by dominating the hormones in their body. But the pathogens in Marcy's body did not do that, showing that they had not prepared for something like this. This could only be possible because, during their evolution to fit Marcy's lineage, they never faced a problem where their host did not give birth to descendants. Since they were not aware of this problem they did not find a solution or prepare for it.

In a way, the pathogens had crippled their evolution when they limited themselves to only infecting Marcy's lineage. But that decision also enabled them to live till today because if the pathogens were to infect others then Marcy's predecessors would be killed for being the patient zero, the carrier of pathogens. However, these pathogens had a good run compared to the other pathogens that died at the very beginning. The ending of these pathogens was more like 'All good things come to an end.'

"How are you feeling?" Wyatt asked Marcy, who was shedding tears. Controlling her emotions, she soon replied, "I finally feel free."

"Good, take this pill, I will show you the true freedom," Wyatt said passing Marcy a high-grade silver milk pill.

Taking the pill from Wyatt, Marcy swallowed it without hesitation. Seeing Aurelia, nudged her cousin with her elbow and whispered, "He is doing it again." Dan nodded, his eyes glued on the sickly girl surrounded by their boss's floating heads and arms.

Unlike Clara who had six percent active soul control, Marcy had none, as until recently it had been constantly abused by a foreign pathogen that Marcy's body had inherited from her predecessors. So Wyatt had to help her build her active soul control percentage from the very beginning however, he found it easier to elevate Marcy's soul compared to Clara's soul because Marcy's soul had a strong talent for active soul control which only further improved under constant abuse of the pathogens.

When Marcy introduced the high-grade silver milk pill into her system, her soul began to devour it like a hungry ghost. After all, it was starved by the pathogens for over a decade and a half. Even without Wyatt's intervention, Marcy's soul began to use the soul energy from the pill to elevate its active soul control at a fast speed. Yet, Wyatt's slave consciousnesses remained and helped guide Marcy's soul to follow the advanced soul cultivation method, allowing it to digest the soul power from the high-grade silver milk pill efficiently.

0% >> 1% >> ... >> 7% >> ... >> 10% >> 11% >>...>> 16%>>...>>19%...

Under the influence of the silver milk pill and following the guidance of Wyatt's consciousnesses Marcy's soul instantly got rid of its mortal status and became a card student, if not for Wyatt's stopping it, it would broken through to the card soldier realm. Marcy's predecessor's talent was a lot scarier than Wyatt had estimated. It seemed to have undergone constant evolution along with the pathogens.

Taking out a golden grimoire, Wyatt awakened Marcy and passed it to her saying, "Contract it." Seeing Wyatt hand a golden grimoire to Marcy to contract, the onlookers were all surprised. They all had witnessed that Marcy was a mortal and sick on at that, so they could not help but be puzzled why Wyatt asked her to contract a golden grimoire.

Marcy was high on silver milk pill, right now she could not tell up from down let alone respond to Wyatt. The feeling of having her soul rapidly grow was too much for her to handle it was like she was having multiple orgasms in a row. Thankfully her heart could handle it.

Seeing that Marcy was in no state to respond, Wyatt helped Marcy contract the golden grimoire by dropping her blood on it. Once Marcy's blood came in contact with the grimoire, the golden grimoire shined brightly, radiating an amber glow. It started to hover in front of Marcy but since she was out of it, it did not open to reveal her status page instead it was recalled and Wyatt allowed Marcy's soul to do its thing.

19%>> ... >> 25%>> ...>> 29%

Arriving at the peak of the card soldier realm, Marcy's soul had completely digested the high-grade silver milk pill. If not for most of its power being used to contract the golden grimoire and consolidate her status, the soul could have broken into the mid-stage of the card master realm before exhausting the power of the silver milk pill. However, following Wyatt's arrangement Marcy stood to gain the most.

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 12:48

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"She contracted a golden grimoire on her first try."

"Holy shit! Is this the birth of a genius or what?"

"Now I have seen everything."

"Is it because she is too talented or is the silver milk powder that good?"

"First the orphanage headmaster and now a sickly girl, I think it's the silver milk powder."

"Well, it does look like it."

The onlookers were shocked and amazed to see a mortal teenage girl was able to shed her mortal status and become a card soldier while contracting a golden grimoire. They could no longer be silent and began to gossip making wild speculations.

Wyatt ignored the crowd and focused on Marcy, who was still skinny but her body appeared to have become sturdier and gained a rosy glow. Giving Wyatt the feeling that a healthy soul would keep a body healthy.

Compared to Clara whose metamorphosis after becoming a card apprentice was obvious Marcy's metamorphosis wasn't that obvious yet. After all, Marcy's body was at the death's threshold. Her appearing like she could take a punch or two was already a huge change not to forget with proper nutrition, the true change in her body would begin to show.

When Marcy regained control of her elements, Field Marshal was quick to act, she passed an elixir to her saying, "Here you go, child. Drink it, you will feel better."

"Senior this appears expensive," Marcy did not take the elixir and hesitated looking at its extravagant appearance.

"It's nothing child, just drink it," the Field Marshal had specifically prepared this elixir for Marcy she planned to give it to her on the day she recruited her but now plans had changed.

Unlike Wyatt who had managed to remove all the pathogens from Marcy's body thanks to his keen soul pupils, the Field Marshal planned to kill all the pathogens she could find in Marcy's body and have her drink in this elixir.

The Field Marshal knew she could not totally rid Marcy's body of all the alien pathogens but she thought she could help Marcy get stronger than pathogens before they once again grew in her body. This way the pathogens could no longer abuse her soul instead they would form a symbiotic bond and live in harmony like many other friendly pathogens in the human body.

The Field Marshal's idea was possible, if Marcy's soul had grown stronger than the pathogens before their recovery, then like the demons in the dark realm that have managed to live in harmony with these pathogens and as a result gained strong physique, Marcy too stood chances to develop a demonic physique fulfilling the original goal of the human experimentation.

Seeing Field Marshal insist, Marcy took the elixir and drank it. Soon, the loose clothes became too tight for her, revealing that Marcy not only had inherited a high talent for active soul control from her predecessors but extraordinary beauty too. The elixir helped

her truly showcase the metamorphic change she had undergone getting rid of the pathogens in her body and becoming a card soldier with golden grade grimoire.

Noticing the change in Marcy the female onlookers could not help but ask, "What elixir is that? I want one of those."

After coming to terms with the change in her body, Marcy turned to Field Marshal and thanked, "Thank you for the elixir, senior. I will definitely repay you someday."

"Don't mention it," the Field Marshal shook her head acting aloof. She was happy, how could she now be, Wyatt did all the work and she got the credit by gifting an elixir.

Wyatt rolled his eyes at the Field Marshal, how could he not be aware of her intentions? But she was forgetting who he was. Marcy turned to Wyatt to thank him too but he dismissed her and said, "Summon your grimoire."

"Grimoire?" Marcy blurted, but soon recalled that when she was out of it, Wyatt seemed to have helped her contract a grimoire. Intuitively Marcy summoned the grimoire, seeing its grade she exclaimed, "Golden grimoire!!"

"What are you making a fuss about? open your status page and let me see that my efforts were not in vain," Wyatt said coldly, hearing him Marcy nodded and opened her grimoire to show him her status page. Wyatt indifferent went through Marcy's status page to find the following:

[Trait Name: Prodigious Soul

Trait Type: Innate (Passive)

Trait Effect: The user's soul has an extraordinary talent for soul cultivation.]

[Trait Name: Unbreakable

Trait Type: Innate (Passive)

Trait Effect: The user's body and soul will not collapse until the user's will is extinguished.]

[Physique Name: Gifted Lineage

Physique Type: Innate (Passive)

Physique Effect: The user's descendant will inherit the user's innate talent 'Prodigious Soul.']

"Two traits and One physique, not bad," Wyatt uttered going through Marcy's grimoire. Then returning the grimoire to Marcy he said, "You did not embarrass me."

Of the two traits and one physique that Marcy had, the trait 'Prodigious Soul' she had inherited from her predecessor, as for the physique 'Gifted Lineage' she inherited it from the pathogens that had been plaguing her since her birth. Lastly, her trait 'Unbreakable' was a testament to her life so far.

Just like Clara who gained the trait 'Soul Sensitivity' because of the way she lived her life, similarly, Marcy gained the trait 'Unbreakable' as a product of the way she had lived her life. Marcy never let her condition break her conviction and values. She had lived her life the best way she knew without letting her circumstances compromise her.

Listening to Wyatt say that Marcy had two traits and one physique, the Field Marshal almost drooled. Wiping her drool the Field Marshal cleared her throat, "*Ahem* Child, can I have a look at your status page?"

"Sure, Senior," Marcy passed the grimoire to the Field Marshal with a gentle smile even though she had not gotten a proper look at her status. Going through Marcy's status page, the Field Marshal's aloof expression was replaced with utter disbelief.

...

[AN: Check out Reader's Quest Board in the Author's Thoughts section for mass release.]

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1987 Neglected Field Marshal

[1,042 words]

Chapter 1987 Neglected Field Marshal

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 12:56

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"Another mortal with the potential to become a demigod..." The Field Marshal uttered in disbelief. She could understand Wyatt helping people to enrich their souls with silver milk pills and elevate their active soul control to awaken and contract grimoires to become card apprentices but to help them awaken traits and physiques that too with limitless potential, her understanding of the new reality, that was created with Wyatt in mind, had been shattered by Wyatt again. The Field Marshal returned Marcy her grimoire and then grabbed Wyatt by his collar to desperately ask, "You, how are you doing it?"

"What do you mean? I just helped her digest the silver milk pill, the rest was her talent. You did see those traits and physiques were all innate and not acquired right?" Wyatt wanted to brush her off saying, 'Add it to the list of things she wants answered by him.' But he refrained, as she seemed too agitated by the turn of events. So much so that she was talking to him openly without telepathy and creating a scene ignoring the heated gaze of onlookers. Fearing that if he were to dismiss her again the scene might turn into a drama he narrated what the onlookers thought they saw instead of telling her what he had done. "What are you complaining about, weren't you the one who asked me not to cheap out on her? There, I did everything in my power to help her, shouldn't you be happy now?" Wyatt disintegrated the collar of his shirt freeing himself from Field Marshal. Taking a few steps back he restructured his shirt while the Field Marshal tried to find holes in his story to get him to tell her the truth. Ignoring the Field Marshal, Wyatt turned to Aurelia Malvin and said, "Your turn." "Boss, will I also be getting traits and physique like my little sister?" Aurelia asked shamelessly calling Marcy her little sister even though this was the first time they had met. This was her announcing her interest in having Marcy join Bright Lions under her wing. Meanwhile, Marcy could not come to terms with the sudden changes in her life. She tried to but failed as the changes kept coming at her one after the other. One second she was disease-ridden, struggling to survive, and cleaning sewers for a living but now she was a healthy and talented card soldier with two traits, one physique, and a golden grimoire. It was just too much for her little mind to process. "All I am going to do is try and fix your quirky physique, whether or not you awaken extra physique or traits that depend on your innate talent. But considering that you haven't awakened them already, it is unlikely that, you will awaken any," Wyatt wasn't honest with Aurelia. He not only planned to help fix her innate physique but also help her acquire one trait and another physique. The reason Wyatt lied could not be more obvious, he did not want others lining up to ask him to help them acquire traits and physique. Listening to Wyatt's answer, the Field Marshal who had perked up her ears taking interest in Aurelia's question shook her head in disappointment. However, she did not give up knowing Wyatt wouldn't just give up the truth so easily therefore she planned to catch him in the act and confront him. Right now the torment the Field Marshal was going through only she knew as she had promised her loyalty to the most mysterious person who doesn't seem to accept her. Yes, she knew his basic birth and citizen records but apart from that Wyatt was a total enigma to her. Having promised her loyalty to him, the Field Marshal did the courteous thing of asking Wyatt what she did not understand not caring about the disparity in their realm and status as she had given her undying loyalty to him, realm and status did not matter anymore.

However, Wyatt kept dismissing her and didn't share anything with her. As if he was still wary of her. The worst part about it was that Wyatt was being subtle about it and not doing it outright. Not giving her a chance to confront him about it. His actions were starting to cause her mental and emotional torment. She had given him her loyalty yet he still treated her as an outsider. The Field Marshal felt like a dog neglected by its master. As for her actions concerning Marcy Davis, the Field Marshal had taken fancy to that girl long before Wyatt even knew about her existence and did not want Marcy to be smitten by Wyatt and take the wrong path just like Anna and Ann. That was all. Unable to tolerate Wyatt's treatment towards her the Field Marshal grew desperate yet Wyatt gave her the run around and did not tell her the truth. Driven to the corner by Wyatt, the Field Marshal had two choices:

-Wait for Wyatt to accept her. -Do something to gain Wyatt's acceptance. The Field Marshal was not a big fan of waiting around so she decided to do something. That was confront Wyatt with evidence, get him to confess, and demand his acceptance. If he still did not accept her then she would ask him what she had to do to gain his acceptance. She was willing to complete all her labors to prove her loyalty to Wyatt.

She would rather die trying to prove her loyalty than be neglected.

Now that the Field Marshal had promised Wyatt her undying loyalty in the presence of the world will, there was no turning back. Whether Wyatt accepted her or not, the Field Marshal's loyalty belonged to Wyatt. If Wyatt was still not willing to accept her after all her attempts to prove her loyalty to him, she could only ask him to kill her and set her free. But before she drew her last breath she would ask him, 'Why did you trick me into giving you my undying loyalty to you if you did not want it?'

..

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

- Chapter 1988 This Life Is Yours To Demand

Chapter 1988 This Life Is Yours To Demand

[1,021 words]

Chapter 1988 This Life Is Yours To Demand

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 12:59

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

The Field Marshal then, turned to look at Marcy was surrounded by Diana, Cindy, and a few other people. She made her way to Marcy, taking out a card from her grimoire, she extended it to Marcy saying, "Girl, I have no more use for this card. Take it, it will help you." "No, Senior, you have already done enough for me," Marcy rejected, feeling burdened. First the elixir and now an A-rank card, she felt that if she took the card then she would owe the Elder too much and feared that she would not be able to repay her. "Little Girl, just think of it as my investment in you. Use it to pay me back what you owe when you are strong enough," the Field Marshal added knowing Marcy would not take the card if she did not put it that way. Diana and Cindy who were aware of the Field Marshal's identity signaled Marcy to accept the card. Feeling pressured, Marcy took the card saying, "Senior, I will not let your investment in me go to waste." Equipping the card given by the Field Marshal, Marcy went through its card info: [Card Name: Pyrokinesis

Card Type: Skill Card

Card Rank: A-rank, Rare Grade Card Rate: 9-stars

Card Durability: [84/100]

Card Effect: The user can use their soul energy as fuel to create a flame and control with their spiritual energy. Additional effect: i) Fire manipulation: The user gains the ability to create, shape, and control fire at will.

ii) Fire Affinity: The user gains an innate affinity for fire, granting them bonuses or enhanced abilities when using fire-based attacks or abilities.

iii) Fire Resistance: The user gains a natural resistance to fire damage, reducing the harm taken from fire-based attacks or environmental hazards.

iv) Inferno Blast: The user can unleash a powerful explosion of flames, engulfing enemies in a fiery inferno.

v) Flame Burst: The user can create a sudden burst of flames in a targeted area, damaging all nearby foes.

vi) Blazing Arrow: The user can shoot an arrow with fiery energy, causing it to ignite upon impact and deal additional burning damage.

vii) Firestorm: The user can summon a raging storm of fire, raining down flames upon enemies over a wide area.

viii) Scorching Ray: The user can emit a focused beam of intense heat, searing enemies with sustained fire damage.]

"Senior, this card is too precious—" Marcy was shocked reading the card info, though it had only been a few minutes since she became a card apprentice, she was used to discussing about card apprentices and cards since she was little so she was aware how costly A-rank skill cards were especially the elemental skill cards. However, Marcy still had no idea just really how precious the card was. The card the Elder gave to her was not something she could buy in the market as it was too precious to be sold and could only be created by high-level card creationists with a lot of experience. Such cards would rarely appear in the auction. Even if they did they would be worth more than regular AA or S rank cards. Even though Marcy had no idea how precious the card was, she knew it was more than she could owe, but before she could return it to the elder, the elder interrupted her sternly saying, "That card is nothing compared to the elixir you drank. If you plan to replay me just use it, grow strong, and come find me." While saying that the Field Marshal signaled Diana and Cindy, and they nodded understanding her intent to have them guide Marcy for the time being. Marcy, unaware of all of this, was in a predicament, as unknowingly she owed more than she was worth. She was indebted to Wyatt and the unknown elder. Others in her place would be too busy savouring the stroke of fortune upon them but she was busy worrying that she was indebted to too many people. "Little Girl, don't tell me you plan to dine and dash," the Field Marshal said trying to provoke Marcy. Previously the Field Marshal wanted to throw Marcy in the Southern Watch after she became a legal adult, but now she did not want to reveal Marcy to the rest of the world. As her traits and physique were too tempting, especially the physique Gifted Lineage, so she wanted to keep her under her protection until she was strong enough to survive in the way beyond. Planning to train Marcy just like how her father trained her. "No, Senior, I did not mean that—" Marcy tried to explain from her end but the Field Marshal interrupted her and said, "Little girl, with your current strength you can never repay me. With that card, you have some hope. Use it to grow strong. When you are strong enough I will come to you to collect the debt. Got it?" "Yes," Marcy firmly nodded. The foolish girl only cared about repaying her debt but never once stopped to consider the hardship she would have to go through as hardship was not new to her, but being cared for was. How could she not understand what the Elder was doing? It was too obvious. Therefore, she did not hesitate to agree to the Elder's proposal. "Good, now go meet your sister and bother they should be worried about you," the Field Marshal nodded and instructed Marcy, having sensed the kids' worry for their sister through her intent sense. "Thank you, Senior," Marcy bowed to the Field Marshal in gratitude, then before leaving she headed to Wyatt, who was struggling to explain to Aurelia that he could not just grant her traits and physique because she asked him as he was not some sort of magician, to express her heartfelt gratitude to him. "Master Wyatt, thank you for everything. This life is yours, if you demand it I will hand it over." ...

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1989 Keeping A Secret

[1,035 words]

Chapter 1989 Keeping A Secret

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 13:04

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Listening to Marcy, I nodded and sent her on her way. She was too upright for his taste. She had too much compassion for her fellows. She was the type who would be willing to suffer more if meant someone else would suffer less. She was the kind Wyatt chose to stay away from. Now that Wyatt had helped her turn her life around at Field Marshal's request he did not want to have anything to do with her. People like Marcy made loyal friends and subordinates but Wyatt's history with such people always ended up with them asking him to compromise for the greater good. Having offered his first life for the greater good now he had reserved his second life for his good. which was why he chose to stay not use Marcy.

"Boss, I am begging you, give me two traits and two physiques. Oh, please, boss, please!" After Marcy left, Aurelia continued with her unsightly begging. Now that she had gotten comfortable around Wyatt the shy fangirl side of hers was nowhere to be seen and was replaced by shameless beggar girl. Listening to Aurelia beg the corner of Wyatt's mouth twitched as he tried to control his anger. However, Aurelia soon got down on both her knees, and joining her hands she begged Wyatt, "Boss, if two traits and two physiques are too much then give me one trait and two physiques. Please, I beg you, please." Seeing Aurelia would not listen to reason, Wyatt turned to bid goodbye to his employees and take his leave, having achieved his goal of using Marcy's ascendance to gain their undying trust and loyalty. This way even if the entire world were to be against Wyatt, these people would not hesitate to support Wyatt and die for what they believe in. Asuring that Wyatt's empire can sustain itself in the storm even in his absence. However, just as Wyatt turned to do so, the kneeling Aurelia suddenly hugged Wyatt's waist tightly, pressing her face against his hip, she pleaded, "Boss, I will be satisfied with one trait and one physique. Please don't leave." "What the heck is wrong with you? Aurelia let go of me before I get angry," Wyatt warned Aurelia but she would not listen and shouted, "I will not leave until you promise me, boss." "Aurelia, let go. Boss has a serious temper," Dan hurriedly asked his cousin to come to her senses before their boss took a drastic measure. 'What the heck, since when did I have a temper I am the most patient boss,' Wyatt thought but he did not voice it as long as it got Aurelia off his back.

But with this Wyatt finally understood how Aurelia a direct descendent of a big family with notable military contribution was able to get along with the hoodlums of the Bright Lion gang in a third tier city so much so that they had a sense of rivalry stemming from comradery. She was a hoodlum herself. No wonder except for Kane no one dared to voice their disagreement when Cindy openly claimed Aurelia to be Wyatt's number one fan. She had almost tamed everyone in the Bright Lions with her brazen personality and strength. Adding to that she was too honest. Who doesn't love an honest thug? They might not be good at their job but they were lovable that way. "No, I won't let go until the boss promises to give me an extra physique and a trait," Aurelia did not listen to any form of persuasion and continued to hold on to Wyatt. Even if he dragged her on the floor as he walked or almost broke her arms trying to loosen their grip on his waist. As a martial card apprentice whose primary focus was body reinforcement, Aurelia was not afraid of physical pain or getting her suit dirty. Wyatt wanted to break Aurelia's arm and free himself, then give her potion to heal herself but stopped as he was in the presence of his most loyal followers. These guys were willing to sacrifice their life for his dream. Such a violent response to Aurelia's childish tantrum in front of them was too much. As Wyatt's most loyal followers, they deserved some perks. Not that everyone wanted to act spoiled like Aurelia but it was to let them know that in Wyatt's heart, they held a different place compared to the average public. Therefore, he could not resort to violence. Left with little choice, Wyatt pulled Aurelia up and whispered in her ears that he would give her what she wanted only if she could keep a secret from the rest of the world. "Really, but I can't do that," Aurelia replied honestly fully aware that she could not keep a secret. That was also one of the reasons why she avoided lying. "Then sorry, I cannot do anything about it. How about this, for now, I will fix your physique but when you are sure you can do what I asked come to me and I will keep my promise. Does that sound good?" Wyatt patiently handled Aurelia gaining a nod from the older employees from the the Fine Gold. No matter how capable their leader was if he could not sympathize or get along with them what was the point of all their sacrifice? Continuing to hug Wyatt's waist resting her head on his hip, Aurelia went into deep contemplation, and seeing that she was taking too long to answer, Dan offered to help, "Aurelia, what did the boss say?" "He said when I can keep a secret he will give me what I want, but I don't think I can ever keep a secret," Aurelia replied in frustration. Understanding that Aurelia can never keep a secret as such their Boss will never have to give her the physique and traits she kept pestering him about, the employees nodded thinking, 'As, expect of our boss.'

Dan, however, curiously asked Wyatt, "Boss, how did you know that Aurelia could not keep a secret?" ...

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1990 Shameless Aurelia

[1,022 words]

Chapter 1990 Shameless Aurelia

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 13:09

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"She fits the bill of an honest fool," Wyatt replied answering Dan, however, the turn of events was not something he planned. He just did what he thought would get Aurelia off him but she remained stuck to him taking her sweet time to consider the compromise he offered her. Listening to Wyatt, the employees nodded in unison agreeing that Aurelia was an honest fool. During their visit to the orphanage to meet Wyatt, Aurelia had managed to become acquainted with all the employees from Fine Gold. They all had a good impression of her. In some ways, she became a bridge for the young people from the Bright Lions to get along with the experienced people from the Fine Gold. This was why when Wyatt arrived at the Gymnasium they appeared like one crowd instead of two separate groups. "Boss, I don't like it when you call me a fool but since you called me honest too I will let it go," Aurelia informed, she has been upfront about her dislike of being called a fool or other similar words but her boss kept calling her a fool. He reminds her of her annoying Elder brother. She just wanted to thrash him but her martial artist instincts told her she would die before her punch even landed at him. As such she was learning the meaning of the words 'Don't meet your heroes' the hard way but just like how she learned to love her elder brother she also found a way to love her boss. The fact that her boss was a lot stronger than she thought made it easier. "Just let go of me already," Wyatt said, trying hard not to lose his patience with Aurelia. "Fine boss, for now, I will just be satisfied with fixing my physique," Aurelia said, letting go of Wyatt's waist. Standing up as she dusted herself, Aurelia could not help but say, "Boss, I like your fragrance." Dan who was standing next to her slapped his forehead helplessly letting out a deep sigh. After all, Aurelia was only able to enter the Bright Lion gang based on his recommendation. So he felt responsible for every stupid thing she did. Honestly, when his parents said his distant cousin was coming from the main branch to join the Bright Lions gang he thought it would be someone stuck up who would get him in trouble with their arrogance but he never expected to get in trouble because of their stupidity. "I am starting to hate your guts," Wyatt said, finding Aurelia intolerable. To the point where he wondered why he chose to help her in the first place. Nah, not because of the Field Marshal, he planned to help her even before the Field Marshal asked him to. It was because he was blown away by Aurelia's costume. Wrapped in bandages under her tuxedo, she appeared like a hero from one of those comics back on earth causing him to instantly take an interest in her. Learning about her quirky physique he

grew more interested in her and learning that the pathogen in Marcy's body could help her he decided to help her. And also a part of him wanted to lock Aurelia and Aba in a room and see what happens. They had identical honest and foolish personalities but Aurelia was a bit shameless like a thug and Aba was a bit upright like a hero. Wyatt could not help but wonder what happened to Aurelia in Clown Mask's future vision, maybe because of the stubborn pursuit of body reinforcement martial arts to get stronger she succumbed to the quirky nature of her physique. "You remind me of my elder brother," Aurelia retorted. "Just shut up, and let us get over this," Wyatt said in annoyance, and summoning his grimoire he said, "Send me a party invitation so we can begin."

"Boss, I admire what you have done but when I become strong I will thrash you," Aurelia said sending Wyatt a party invitation. "What the fuck is wrong with you? Why would you say something like that to someone who is helping you become strong? Aren't worried in the slightest that they will not help you but punish you or even kill you? What is going on in that muscle brain of yours?" Dan yelled anxiously feeling that Aurelia would be the death of him. "Dan, relax. Boss has a tough exterior but he is not petty enough to do something like that. Am I right, Boss?" Aurelia asked Wyatt with a bright smile. Looking at Aurelia's smile, the corner of Wyatt's mouth twitched, and he replied, "You know what, I am that petty—" However, before Wyatt could complete his sentence, Aurelia immediately got back on her knees, and exaggeratedly prostrating in front of Wyatt, yelled interrupting him, "Boss, please forgive me for I have sinned. I am willing to swallow pins and needles to redeem myself." "Hahaha," the Field Marshal who was keenly watching from the side, looking at Aurelia's antics laughed like there was no tomorrow. She wasn't alone who found this funny. The older employees from Fine Gold, Diana, and Cindy, every one of those who considered Aurelia as their cute little junior found that this was funny. But unlike the Field Marshal, they all controlled their laughter knowing that it might tick off their boss. "For someone who is brutally honest you have no spine do you," Wyatt said looking at Aurelia who was prostrating in front of him while rubbing her head on the floor. "Boss, my mother said I am pure like river water so I should learn to be flexible like the river itself," Aurelia informed. "That's a clever analogy, your mother was smart, to begin with. She would have made a good general if she had not chosen to replace your great grandfather at the border city," the Field Marshal spoke listening to Aurelia. She seemed to have recalled her time with Aurelia's mother.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1991 Border City

[1,045 words]

Chapter 1991 Border City

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 13:14

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Diana, Cindy, and the other employees in the gymnasium lifted their brows listening to the elderly lady say that Aurelia's mother could have made a good general. They were under the impression that Aurelia was from a wealthy family from some 1st-tier city but it seems they had underestimated Aurelia's background. Learning this only increased their impression of Aurelia because she was humble and caring despite her background. Not to mention, not just anybody could become a general candidate, it required a lot of military merit. Not to forget, a decent amount of support from troops to be nominated as a candidate. Regardless of where these candidates ended up, they would be a big deal as they were capable people. It seems Aurelia's mother had rejected the general position for her family. This alone said a lot about Aurelia's mother and her family. Even Dan, whose family treated Aurelia like a princess, finally understood his family's actions. He now knew why his family was enthusiastic about Aurelia staying with them, it seemed the main family was a big deal. "Senior, you know my mother?" Aurelia asked continuing to prostrate in front of Wyatt. "Yes, I have had the pleasure of serving together with your mother at the Way Beyond. She was a charismatic woman. Her subordinates respected her a lot. So much so that when she completed her active duty, many capable soldiers serving under her chose to discharge and move to the Border city to continue following her," The Field Marshal recounted without revealing her identity. Seeing the Field Marshal talk so big about Aurelia's mother and family, Wyatt did a small background check on her. He was surprised to learn what he found on her and Border City. Their influence in the Southern Watch was only second to the Southern Royal family. The only reason the Southerners did not know about them was that they chose not to. That was because the Malvin family, led by Aurelia's great-grandfather had gained so much influence in the Southern military that Southern royal court ministers were worried that Patriarch Malvin could launch a military coup. After all, he held the power to do so. So they impeached him, asking the Southern Ruler to take precautions against him. Getting wind of this, to prove his loyalty to the Southern Ruler and the Heatsend Royal family, the honorable Patriarch Dan Malvin chose to step down from his position as a Field Marshal and move his family to a third-tier city at the border of the Southern Region and Empire. Ultimately that city came to be known as Broder City, which grew to become more than a 1-tier city, it became an iron wall stopping the fanatics from the Empire from wreaking havoc in the Southern Region. Since that incident, it has become a tradition in Aurelia's family to serve in the Southern military and voluntarily discharged once they were prompted to general or above ranks to return to the Border City. Clearly, they were still angry about how their ancestor was treated. Usually, a soldier trying to voluntarily discharge from the military was harder said than done but the Malvin family were not ordinary people. Learning about Aurelia's family history, Wyatt started to find Aurelia pleasing to the eye. An

unconscious grin graced his lips as he informed Aurelia, "Get up, I forgive you. I will help you fix your physique." Looking at Wyatt's grin the Field Marshal had a sense of foreboding. Listening to Wyatt, Aurelia immediately got up on her knees and thanked him, "Thank you, thank you, boss, thank you." She hurriedly crawled on her knees and hugged Wyatt's waist saying, "You are the best boss. I never doubted you." "I believe you. Now, let go of me before I change my mind," Wyatt said knowing that Aurelia was not only honest but knew how the world worked. "Yes, boss," Aurelia's actions of prostrating and groveling earlier were to give Wyatt enough face and reason to forgive her. However, she never thought that Wyatt was offended by her words as she recalled that they were in the presence of other employees, letting her go after she undermined the boss would not be good for the boss's reputation so he had to do what he did. "It won't work," the Field Marshal suddenly said to Wyatt out loud. This caused him to frown knowing what she meant but he acted like he did not, "What won't work?" "Her family has been neutral for generations now, winning them over won't be easy," the Field Marshal said having guessed that Wyatt was trying to win the Malvin Family and Broder City's support through Aurelia. The Field Marshal spoke this out of experience. Anna's mother had tried many means to please the Malvin family and gain their forgiveness but all their tries have failed. Every generation of the Malvin family was filled with talented people with the capability to become good leaders, Anna's mother who revered talent, wanted them on her side to control the Southern Capital better and increase her influence in the Central Capital but she never was able to get through them. "I don't know what you are talking about," Wyatt shook his head denying everything. "Suit yourself, I just gave my suggestion as your loyal subordinate," the Field Marshal informed, she had enough of being neglected and took action. The Field Marshal's words caused a surge of emotion within everyone present as by now everyone had a feeling that the Elderly Lady following their boss had an extraordinary status since she claimed to have served at Way Beyond which was no place for a weakling. If one had managed to survive it long enough to grow gray hairs then that person was really capable. Cindy and Diana who knew the elderly woman's true identity were shocked the most. They thought the Field Marshal was guarding the 'Hope of the South' but to learn that she was their boss's subordinate their minds were blown away. Listening to the Field Marshal's words, Wyatt's grin grew wider, seeing her finally accept her defeat and announce her status publicly.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1992 Are Loyalty And Heart The Same?

[1,041 words]

Chapter 1992 Are Loyalty And Heart The Same?

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 13:14

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

What was the use of having a loyal dog if it acted like it was the master? Such was the case between the Field Marshal and Wyatt. Though Wyatt had managed to gain the Field Marshal's loyalty, he had yet to win her over. Wyatt assured the Field Marshal that he would not use her loyalty against the Southern Region.

Wyatt assured the Field Marshal that he would help the Southern Region prosper. Wyatt even assured the Field Marshal that he would make her the world's strongest and take her beyond that. However, nothing he said was enough to win her heart, it still belonged to the Southern Royal family. Wyatt felt pity for the Lorn Family. Despite their status, they were like the slaves grown and groomed to serve the Southern Royal family. After all, Both Field Marshal and Lorenzo, despite starting their own family always have been loyal to the Southern Royal family. With their combined strength and knowledge they could gain more status, wealth, and authority for themselves and their family than what the Southern Royal family had ever given them yet they chose to serve the Southern Royal family. Just looking back at her history, Wyatt understood that winning the Field Marshal's heart was not easy as she had dedicated her entire life to the Southern royal family. For him to reprogram her would not be easy, especially since he used trickery to win her loyalty. Therefore, he had decided to leave her alone until the time was right. Believing that to be the best course of action to deal with the Field Marshal.

And soon enough Wyatt's choice proved to be correct. He did not think that his action would get a reaction from the Field Marshal so fast but the result were in front of him. However, this did not mean he would respond to her. He planned to continue his course of action until the Field Marshal accepts her new reality and breaks free of the Southern royal family's brainwashing. Once Wyatt had the Field Marshal's heart then he not only planned to start his plan to make her the strongest in the Card World but truly involve her in his grand plans just like he did with Susan and Corey Park. As for Corey, she was Park's baggage he could only tolerate her. "Suit yourself, I just gave my suggestion as your loyal subordinate," the Field Marshal replied accepting her new status, to which Wyatt nodded, and controlling his growing grin he said, "Noted." The Field Marshal was taken aback by Wyatt's cold reply. Wyatt wasn't cold but the Field Marshal felt he was being cold. It was all in her mind as she thought that Wyatt would be excited to hear her call herself his loyal subordinate but he was not rather he acted as if he did not care if she was his subordinate or not. Normally at times like this Field Marshal's keen eyes and intent sense would help her discern the emotions and thoughts of the person in front of her but Wyatt was different, despite being in a lower realm than her his thoughts and emotions were an enigma to her. It was like she was trying to see the water level in the darkest well that ever existed. So in front of him, she could not help but feel like she

was not the top ten strongest demigod but a mortal. This feeling made her more vulnerable to Wyatt's mind games. Adding to the fact that losing the wager to Wyatt had already left a huge shadow in her mind. All of this combined, Wyatt's image in the Field Marshal's mind was bigger than that of her strongest adversary. "Aurelia, I have sent you a party invite since the one you sent has expired, accept it so we can begin," Wyatt instructed Aurelia who had let go of him but still continued to kneel. She did not appear to mind the kneeling position. It was as if she was more used to kneeling and groveling than standing. It seems she was a born troublemaker. "I have accepted your invite boss," Aurelia said giving Wyatt a thumbs up. She did not appear to be ashamed or embarrassed in the slightest by the events earlier. Instead, she seems to have grown more comfortable around Wyatt and the other employees. "Good, now hand over your grimoire," Wyatt demanded planning to start repairing Aurelia's physical. Listening to Wyatt, Aurelia passed her grimoire to her boss without hesitation. Seeing Aurelia's grimoire was a silver-grade grimoire Wyatt was not surprised considering she had a low talent for active soul control. If not for the resources and training of her family she might have not awakened or reached the card master realm. Just as Wyatt was about to start he turned to the crowd and said, "As much as I would like all of you to witness me fix her physique, this one is going to take a while. So it would be best if you guys did not wait for me." He then signaled at Cindy and Diana. They nodded and Diana promptly spoke up saying, "Okay, boss. You take your time. We will take our leave." "Might as well, the crowd outside is growing uncontrollable," Cindy said, and then turning to the Fine Gold and Bright Lions employees she added, "Let us go help the others disperse the crowd. So that boss can leave peacefully once he is done here." Listening to Cindy and Diana assign them work the crowd said their goodbye to Wyatt before leaving to fulfill their task. As the crowd left, Aurelia asked Wyatt, "Boss, will it take too much time? I hate waiting." "Aurelia, I like that you are honest but you should learn about time and place. If you manage to do that then you are golden," Wyatt advised Aurelia. Only to hear her say, "Boss, my mom said the same thing. I would do that but I hate to wait for the right time and place." "Just like the river."

..

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1993 Aurculean Physique

[1,023 words]

Chapter 1993 Aurculean Physique

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 13:20

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Aurculean, the physique of the famous Patriarch Dan Malvin. Alone, without the main Malvin family bloodline, it was an incomplete or quirky physique. However, the Aurculean physique combined with the Malvin family bloodline gave the wielder unstoppable momentum and strength. Making their achievements in the Southern Watch no less than those with the Unparalleled bloodline coursing through their body. As a result, the sycophant ministers deemed them a threat to the Ruler and the Royal family. Every generation in the main Malvin family, there would be at least one descendant who awakened this physique sometimes there were more. In the previous generation, it was Aurelia's mother and her three brothers. In the current generation, it was just Aurelia and her elder brother. However, Aurelia had inherited the Aurculean physique but not the Malvin Family's bloodline. Making her the weakest and most unremarkable of all the wielders of Aurculean physique in history. Aurelia's case was special, it made one wonder, how she could awaken the Aurculean physique but not the main Malvin family bloodline as bloodlines were to be inherited by one's descendants without exception but not the physiques. Until Aurelia became a card apprentice and awakened Aurculean physique, the Border City people thought she might not be a descendant of the Malvin family but was adopted as she did not have their bloodline.

Though born as the princess of the Border City, Aurelia was never treated as one. Even her elder brother did not acknowledge her until she awakened the Aurculean physique. Regardless, the present did not change the past. Yet thanks to her mother's teachings, Aurelia was just like the pure and unstoppable river that moved forward without looking behind not letting anything pollute her purity. "Just like the river," Wyatt uttered, listening to Aurelia say that she did not like waiting, so she did not wait for the right time or place. "You flatter me, boss," Aurelia said shyly, scratching the back of her head. However, Aurelia's shone learning that her boss remembered. It warmed her heart to learn this, she felt that her trip to the Sky Blossom City going against her mother's will was worth it. Why would the princess of the Border City leave the comfort of her castle and come all the way to a 3rd-tier city? She admired the image of Wyatt that her mother had learned through her background check into the boy dubbed as the 'Hope of the South' by the Southern Royal family. Aurelia's favorite part of that image was that a Card Master had not only managed to defeat a devil that killed two dozen elite demigods but was willing to sacrifice himself to protect the world by incubating the plague egg that could wipe out all the card apprentice on the card world within himself. The best part of it was he survived. Nobody knows how but he did the impossible. Unlike the rest of the Southerners who were only aware of Wyatt as a talented card creationist who gave the world silver milk powder, the VR-Universe, and the Soul energy digestion skill cards, Aurelia knew the other lesser-known side of him, which allowed her to gather the courage to break the unspoken tradition of the main Malvin family, instead of joining the Southern Watch as a grunt and take post at the Way Beyond to climb to the General or above rank, she became a thug in the Bright Lions. *Ring-ring!* Just as Wyatt prepared to start fixing Aurelia's physique, the Field Marshal's grimoire rang out loud notifying that

she was receiving a call. Causing Wyatt to frown, he could not believe she was using such childish means to gain his attention. After all, grimoire notification sounded in one's mind and not out aloud unless the Card apprentice wanted it to. "It's your mother," the Field Marshal said, looking at Aurelia who was looking at Wyatt with metaphorical stars visible in her eyes. She shook her head thinking, 'Another one down. Anna has a challenging love life ahead of her.' "My mom?!" Aurelia exclaimed awakening from her stupor. "It seems like she is calling to check on you, after seeing the promotional video," the Field Marshal speculated why her favorite subordinate who had never contacted her after she was discharged suddenly remembered her. "Promotional video, big surprise you guys are quick when it comes to this stuff," Wyatt remarked ordering his super brain card to search all the promotional material related to the 'Hope of the South.' Though he planned to use this opportunity to unofficially declare the Southern region as his territory to the world he still needed to keep the narrative Anna's mother was spreading in check. "Senior, aren't you going to answer the call?" Aurelia asked seeing the Field Marshal was not answering her mother's call. "Do you know how long it has been since she last talked to me?" the Field Marshal asked Aurelia, it seems she was dissatisfied with her favorite subordinate. "I don't. I don't know who you are senior," Aurelia hit back at the Field Marshal's pettiness with honesty. "Well, you are about to," the Field Marshal said, answering the call and turning on the loudspeaker. "Long time no see, Field Marshal Heatsend," An enthusiastic voice similar to Aurelia's sounded from the other end of the call. "... " Aurelia's mouth hung open listening to her mother, piecing her exploded mind together, she hurried prostrated in front of the Field Marshal. Causing Wyatt to shake his head. However, he did not bother to interrupt Aurelia or the Field Marshal. This call was important for him to gain insight into Aurelia's mother. After all, he wanted her.

"I see you haven't lost your sense of humor, I thought you changed becoming the City lord of the Border City," the Field Marshal remarked but almost laughed seeing Aurelia's action. "I am not calling you as the Border City lord but as your Lt. General and a mother," Aurelia's mother replied with her tone turning serious. ...

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1994 Workplace Seniority

[1,052 words]

Chapter 1994 Workplace Seniority

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 13:27

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"Good, I can spare a few minutes for my unfilial subordinate but you should know you are in the company of the Southern Hope and your dearest daughter," the Field Marshal revealed hearing Aurelia's mother take a step back. "I see, what about Her Highness Southern Princess?" Aurelia's mother was not surprised by the Field Marshal's revelation, she was used to working with her and knew how she functioned. She had called her knowing that Southern Princess would be listening in on their conversation. This was why she would not bother to call the Field Marshal until it was necessary despite the comradery between them. "She is not here," the Field Marshal answered indifferently. Listening to Aurelia's mother, Wyatt understood that the Field Marshal was treating him like how she treated Anna's mother. That was fast. If the Field Marshal was still loyal to Anna's mother, then she would have connected the call to Anna's mother's grimoire so she would listen in instead of turning on the loudspeaker so he could listen in. Learning this, Wyatt's back grew wet with sweat in a scare. He thanked his fortune that he only ever had a serious talk with the Field Marshal telepathically and Anna's mother was too busy in that central capital answering the world about Gideon Grim, Silver milk powder, the VR universe, and the Soul energy digestion card. The legislators of the central government were working day and night to come up with new laws that would limit Wyatt and the Southern Royal family's authority over his inventions and discoveries after their master's World Decree debacle. Even though their Master had given Wyatt full authority over his inventions and discoveries, as long as they were to think of ways for Wyatt to willingly let go of his authority over them all was fair, the World's will would not interfere. Anna's mother was defending Wyatt's rights to defend her own and also because she believed him to be hers. This was one of the many things the Southern Royal family was doing for Wyatt without him knowing or asking, even if they had their agenda to do so. Listening to the Field Marshal claim that the Southern Princess was not listening in on their conversation, Aurelia's mother paused as if taking her time to contemplate something. She knew the Field Marshal would not lie otherwise she would not have bothered to inform her that the call was on speaker. "Don't tell me you switched your alliance to the Southern Hope," Aurelia's mother exclaimed after piecing what the Field Marshal's action meant. "That doesn't concern you, but if this call is not about business but personal, I can get some privacy," Field Marshal was not surprised Aurelia's mother instantly figured out what was going on, she was not her favorite subordinate for no reason. "No need, I wanted to confirm about the Southern Hope's character since my daughter was set on giving her loyalty to him but since you have given your loyalty to him I can rest assured about him," Aurelia's mother said without making any comment about Field Marshal switching her loyalty to a teenager despite having slave for Southern royal family her entire life. "Aurelia, honey, whatever happens, remember you are a river but unlike the river, you also have a home to return to," giving Aurelia a few words of confidence, Aurelia's mother hung up the call bidding goodbye to Field Marshal. "Your mother is one selfish and heartless woman," The Field Marshal said seeing Aurelia's mother hang up the call getting what she wanted. "Your Highness, please forgive my me and mother our insolence," Aurelia apologized continuing to prostrate in front of the Field Marshal. "Girl, get up. I am

starting to feel embarrassed because of you," the Field Marshal was not lying as Aurelia's action made her feel she was bullying Aurelia with her identity and power.

"Field Marshal Heatsend, my mother was right you are the most generous. I am honored to work with you," Aurelia replied getting up on her knees. "Work with me?" the Field Marshal asked in confusion. "Yes, we both are boss's subordinates. If you don't mind me asking can you tell me when you joined?" Aurelia asked, trying to figure out the seniority in the workplace. "Bart, don't get any funny ideas," the Field Marshal warned Aurelia instantly understanding what Aurelia was getting. Though she was a princess, she started as a mere no-name foot soldier at the Way Beyond so she was fully aware of how workplace seniority worked. "She joined us this morning," Wyatt replied to Aurelia in amusement wondering how she would use this information. "Really," Aurelia asked Wyatt excitedly, and getting up on her feet she then turned to lock eyes with the Field Marshal who was staring at her with a threatening gaze and informed her without any fear or hesitation, "Marshal Heatsend, don't worry since you know my mother I won't treat you badly." "Girl, do you want the beating of a lifetime?" Field Marshal asked Aurelia with a menacing gaze however to her surprise, Aurelia ignored her and turning to Wyatt, she complained, "Boss, the new recruit acting out."

"That is it, I will let you experience what a beating of a lifetime is so that you won't dare to wag your tail at me again," the Field Marshal said taking a step forward, Aurelia was quicker she hid behind Wyatt and yelled, "Know your place newbie, I am your senior. How dare you threaten me!" "Hahaha," Wyatt burst out in laughter looking at the steaming Field Marshal adding, "Now this is funny." "Boss, the new recruit is resorting to violence. This is no laughing matter she doesn't know her place," Aurelia hurriedly informed hugging Wyatt's neck while an invisible force was pulling her to the Field Marshal's side.

"Boss, do something, save me," Aurelia cried for help. "Field Marshal, that is enough," Wyatt came to her rescue understanding that Aurelia's mother had trained Aurelia perfectly. None of his subordinates had the guts to point the obvious, if Field Marshal was his most loyal subordinate then why did she not act like one.

..

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1995 Unpaid Intern

[1,028 words]

Chapter 1995 Unpaid Intern

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 13:36

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

The Field Marshal Heatsend claimed to be Wyatt's loyal subordinate but she went and did what she felt like. She never bothered to ask Wyatt what he wanted her to do, rather did what she felt needed. Now that was not what a loyal subordinate would do. Wyatt never asked Field Marshal's advice on trying to ally with the Malvin Family through Aurelia. Wyatt never asked Field Marshal to let him eavesdrop on her conversation with Aurelia's mother. Wyatt had asked Field Marshal to help him with the criminal rehabilitation and reintegration program. But the Field Marshal had yet to act on it. The Field Marshal did everything but what Wyatt asked her to. Not that she planned on a rebellion, it was just that even though she had given her loyalty to him the reluctance in her heart was making it difficult for her to fully accept her new role. Honestly, she was making things awkward between them with her half-assed loyalty.

Now Wyatt could point that out to Field Marshal but that would open up another awkward conversation as he did earn her loyalty through unconventional means justifying the reluctance she showed. So, he tried to pamper her with lavish promises but they did not manage to erase the Field Marshal's hesitation. Since carrots did not work he could only turn to stick. Surprisingly, it yielded extraordinary results.

However, it was a different story if say someone other than Wyatt pointed out the obvious to the Field Marshal. Like Aurelia did. When the rest of Wyatt's subordinates thought Wyatt was lucky and capable of having someone of the Field Marshal's status and abilities guarding and helping him, only Aurelia noticed what the others failed to notice. Not only did Aurelia take notice of Field Marshal's faults but she did not hesitate to point them out to her. This was why Wyatt could not help but look at Aurelia differently. Underneath her honest personality along with her spineless and shameless act, she hid the knowledge and training she gained from her mother, the City Lord of Border City, the Iron Wall between the Empire and the Southern Region. "Field Marshal, that's enough now," Wyatt said, and pushing Aurelia off him as the Field Marshal ceased her pull on her, he wanted to whisper to Aurelia, 'Nice Assist.' Instead, he added, "Field Marshal, she is right. She does have seniority over you." Being pushed off by Wyatt, Aurelia fell on her butt. However, she did not take offense and immediately got on her feet. Dusting her behind, listening to Wyatt give her the green light, Aurelia yelled at Field Marshal, "Newbie, I will forgive you since this is your first offense. However, in the future, I will not tolerate such actions. Workplace hostility is a serious offense, and appropriate actions will be taken against offenders."

"Really," the Field Marshal menacingly stared at Aurelia and with a sneer, she sarcastically asked her as an invisible pressure emitted from her and covered Aurelia,

"Senior, may I know what actions you are taking about." Under the insane pressure from Field Marshal's strong intent sense, Aurelia was sweating through her tuxedo but she did not step back rather she stared back into the Field Marshal's gaze and answered, "Newbie, appropriate punishment involves official reprimand and docking a month's pay or more." "But senior, I don't get paid," the Field Marshal replied increasing her pressure on Aurelia. The intent sense was unique to the demigods, it could not be considered an attack as its uses were projecting one's emotions and thoughts onto others, hiding one's emotions and thoughts from others, and sensing others' emotions and thoughts. It was unlike any form of attack but loosely fell under spiritual attack. Which varied based on people's interpretations. Listening to the Field Marshal, Aurelia was stumped and turned to look at Wyatt for confirmation, who indifferently nodded agreeing to the Field Marshal's claim. Beads of sweat started to ooze from Aurelia's head but she did not give up and said, "Since you are an unpaid intern, we will issue you an official reprimand. If you get three of those then you are out. Good luck, finding another job with three official reprimands on your resume." Wyatt almost laughed aloud listening to Aurelia, while Field Marshal stared at her wondering if she was for real. Shaking his head, Wyatt ordered Field Marshal, "Retrieve your intent sense." Aurelia's heart was beating louder than a drum, if the Field Marshal's pressure continued, Wyatt was afraid it might burst. The Field Marshal frowned but retrieved her intent sense covering Aurelia following Wyatt's order. She wanted Wyatt to no longer neglect her however this was not it. Things should not have unfolded like this. "Aurelia, I will hand over the newbie to you. Help her adjust to our organization. From now on you are responsible for her," Wyatt instructed Aurelia, her knees were wobbling and she looked like she had just come out of a sauna. Turning to look at Wyatt, Aurelia forced a big smile, and extending her hand she gave him a thumbs up, accepting her new responsibility with a heavy heart. Then, she demanded, "Boss, I need hazard pay and a rise. Since I don't know when I can die in this job." Wyatt smiled, seeing he had not judged Aurelia wrong. She was starting to grow on him, patting her shoulder he said, "How about a physique and a trait you asked for? Will that do or do you prefer a pay rise instead?" Listening to Wyatt, both Aurelia and Field Marshal stared at him widening their eyes in astonishment. Recovering from her shock, Aurelia hurriedly agreed, "Boss, I will take the extra physique and trait," while chanting, "All hail the Southern Hope! Long live the Southern Hope." "I was right, you can give people physique and trait," the Field Marshal uttered hearing Wyatt openly agree to what she had been speculating since the beginning, instantly forgetting about the shame Aurelia and Wyatt had put her through.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1996 Annulling The Wager

[1,064 words]

Chapter 1996 Annulling The Wager

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 13:41

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"Yes, I can. But Aurelia's case is special. Remember how I told you before, the thing killing Marcy can save Aurelia," Wyatt agreed finally revealing the truth to Aurelia and Field Marshal. "Yes, yes, I remember. Boss, you are great," Aurelia praised Wyatt without sparing her saliva. Had she not been covered in sweat, she would have hugged him. "What do you mean?" Field Marshal unlike Aurelia was more focused on understanding what Wyatt meant, wanting to be thorough.

"Do I have to elaborate? Just like how the hidden families have their method to let their descendants inherit certain physiques and traits that they do not share with the world. I too have developed a few methods for certain physiques and traits," Wyatt answered honestly.

"So Clara's 'Soul sensitivity' and Marcy's 'Unbreakable' 'Prodiogous Soul' & 'Gifted Linage' were your doing?" The Field Marshal inquired Wyatt as these traits and physiques were just too attractive. The Hidden families that Wyatt spoke of did have methods to help their descendants get physique and traits but the physique and traits they gained were nowhere as good and powerful as the ones Clara and Marcy awakened. If Wyatt had the method to help others awaken traits and physiques similar to the ones awakened by Clara and Marcy then that would be godly. "No, don't misunderstand. I did enrich Clara and Marcy's souls and helped them become card apprentices but the physique and traits they awakened have nothing to do with me. I am generous but not generous enough to gift people I just met the traits and physiques with infinite potential," Wyatt said shaking his head, as he too had his eyes on Clara's 'Soul Sensitivity' and Marcy's 'Unbreakable' traits, but he was helpless as they were the qualities of their souls they had honed by grinding themselves in the mill named life. The Field Marshal nodded feeling what Wyatt said made sense, she did not believe him when he said he was not capable enough to grant those traits and physiques but she believed him when he said he was not generous enough to gift those traits and physiques to strangers. Clearly showing what kind of impression she had of him despite all that they had been through these past few days. "Hey, Intern. Aren't you being too casual and a bit disrespectful when addressing the boss? Do you even need me to teach you the basic manners? Your actions will reflect badly on you since I am responsible for you," Aurelia suddenly snapped at the Field Marshal. "Were you speaking to me?" The Field Marshal responded threateningly staring at Aurelia. "What kind of attitude is that? Believe it or not, I will write an official reprimand. Remember, three strikes and you are out," Aurelia yelled back. By now the Field Marshal should have taken the hint that Aurelia would not back down to such tricks. "Field Marshal, if I were you I would take her words seriously," Wyatt said supporting Aurelia. Feeling that

the Field Marshal was not taking Aurelia seriously. "... the Field Marshal intently looked at Wyatt without saying anything. Only to hear him say, "If you want to give me your loyalty do it my way. Otherwise, I don't want your loyalty." "What do you mean you do not want my loyalty? What do you take me for? I am not a plaything that you can discard after playing with it. I am the Southern Hero, damn it!" the Field Marshal yelled in frustration. "I don't care if you are the Southern Hero. I wanted a loyal subordinate who could follow my orders, not someone who did what they wanted and when they wanted while claiming to be loyal to me. Speak now, if you cannot be mine complete in heart and mind, then I will annul the oath so you can go where your heart and mind are. If worst comes to worst I will think that I bet on the wrong person," Wyatt gave the Field Marshal a chance to regain her freedom. "... the Field Marshal could not immediately respond listening to Wyatt's proposition.

Shaking his head, Wyatt decisively declared, "Field Marshal, in the presence of the World's will: I, Dalton Wyatt, of my own free will, annul the wager between us. You are now free to leave."

Aurelia looked at Wyatt in shock, she had no idea what the wager he spoke of was but she could not fathom why he would free a capable slave like Field Marshal. If it were her, she could not do it. "Y-you you—" The Field Marshal felt like a lump was blocking her speech. She was the most astonished by Wyatt's decisive action as it was directly related to her fate. Instead of being happy that she was free she felt both rejected and abandoned by Wyatt.

"Now, leave. I would like to continue helping my true subordinate in peace," Wyatt shunned the Field Marshal like she was an after thought and turned to face Aurelia. Only to find her kowtowing in front of Field Marshal seeking her forgiveness. Witnessing this blacklines formed on Wyatt's head. She was indeed could adapt to change quickly like the river, Wyatt will give her that. "Intern— I mean newbie— I mean Your Highness Field Marshal Heatsend, please spare me. I wasn't thinking straight. The little power I had, had gotten to my head. I beg you, please do not waste your energy on me, I am a nobody—" Aurelia began to beg the Field Marshal to spare her life. Now that her boss had fired the Field Marshal, she had no power whatsoever over the Field Marshal and had to watch out for her revenge. "Aurelia shut up and get the heck up. She cannot harm me or any of my friends, family, and employees," Wyatt interrupted Aurelia sternly informing his most shameless subordinate about his contract with Anna. Listening to Wyatt, Aurelia lifted her head and looked at Wyatt for confirmation. Recieving a nod of confirmation her face instantly regained her smug expression as she got up on her feet, and looking at the stunned Field Marshal she said, "Intern, you should have listened to me. You might have lasted longer—" *Boom!* ...

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1997 Annulment Invalid

[1,038 words]

Chapter 1997 Annulment Invalid

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 13:48

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

" — in our organization," Aurelia completed her sentence ignoring the deep pit that had formed half an inch to her side by the immense strength of the Field Marshal. She knew this might be the Field Marshal's warning shot yet she chose to believe her boss's words and complete what she prepared to say risking her life. Listening to the loud noise, Cindy and Diana who were waiting outside the gymnasium rushed in worried for their boss. "Boss, you okay?" Diana asked looking at the pit next to Aurelia and Wyatt. "Did the contractor do a lousy job? But it was fine earlier," Cindy said, with no hostile in sight. "Leader, the boss just fired the intern for doing a lousy job so she is acting up," Aurelia said pointing at the Field Marshal. Listening to Aurelia address the Field Marshal as an intern and blame her of doing a lousy job, Cindy and Diana's eyes widened as if they heard a banshee's scream. Diana immediately yelled, "Shut up, you stupid girl. You have no idea the forces you are messing with. If you are tired of living then, do it at your own expense don't involve our boss in it."

"Yes, he hasn't lived enough. He has yet to enjoy the pleasure the world has to offer," Cindy backed Diana with her ambiguous words. Then feeling her boss's blank stare she quickly added, "That senior is not someone you can disrespect. Apologize quickly." "Don't worry leader, I know that is the Field Marshal in disguise. Regardless of her title and achievements in her previous job, she is still an unpaid intern who joined our organization just this morning. You guys have seniority over her— I'm sorry, you guys had seniority over her since the boss just fired her for being a lousy intern. It is because you two pampered her that she had gone astray and forgotten her duties," Aurelia blamed Diana and Cindy for the Field Marshal's actions. Then, shaking her head Aurelia looked at the Field Marshal in pity and said, "Sigh, intern don't feel sad as you senior we have failed to teach you to do your duty properly maybe in your next job you will learn from the mistakes here, respect your seniors, and learn everything they have to offer." Diana and Cindy were in shock listening to Aurelia's words, it only intensified when they learned she had spoken those words despite knowing the Field Marshal's identity. Their bodies suddenly felt like they were inside a sauna and began to sweat through their office suits. They wanted to stop Aurelia from spouting further nonsense but their body would not listen. Their jaw was shut and their tongues were dry. They suddenly felt thirsty seeing their dooms flash before their eyes. "You really are your mother's

daughter," the Field Marshal responded with a smile finally having completed her contemplation. "Yes, I am. My mother taught me well. I could have taught you a thing or two but it was not meant to be. Intern let's part our ways without creating a scene," Aurelia advised the Field Marshal, and then turning to look at Wyatt she asked, "Boss, the intern did a lousy job but it is not my fault. So, I will still get the bonus you promised me, right?" "Yes, you will since you have performed extraordinarily. Tell you what, keep this up and I might let you lead the Bright Lions security agency," Wyatt was impressed by Aurelia's work so far, she was the best sidekick one could ask for. Now with someone who understood him like her by his side, he would not have to do everything alone. Taking Aurelia as an example Wyatt was thoroughly impressed by the Malvin Family whose merits were only second to the Heatsend Royal family in the Southern Watch. That to because they held back otherwise they would have long suppressed them. "Great, you are the best boss," Aurelia praised, and then turning to the Field Marshal she said, "You haven't left yet? Don't tell me you plan on begging to get your old job back. Don't be like that. Try applying next year if I get promoted to the upper management rank by then I will hire you under me. What do you say?" "Girl, don't you ever run out of saliva?" the Field Marshal asked Aurelia, indirectly saying that she talked too much. "Aren't you too happy for someone who just got fired?" Aurelie remarked. The Field Marshal ignored Aurelia and looking at Wyatt she said, "You did not bet on the wrong person." "I don't care if you have annulled the wager but I have promised to give my undying loyalty to you if I lost the wager. Here I am, doing just that," the Field Marshal stepped closer to Wyatt, and reaching him she prepared to get down on one knee but an invisible force stopped her from doing so. For her strength, the invisible force was as fragile as glass but since it belonged to Wyatt she did not break it instead followed it and stood straight. Wyatt looked at the Field Marshal with a disappointed look and shaking his head he decided to address her, "I don't know what you think you are doing but I don't need your loyalty. Was I not clear enough when I annulled the wager?" "It is no longer up to you. You should have thought of that before asking for it in return for winning the wager. Now that you have won the wager, I will honor my promise and give you my undying loyalty," the Field Marshal said bringing up her honor. "What wager? What part of the annulment don't you understand? I declared it as invalid, so you owe me nothing," Wyatt replied in annoyance. "Wyatt, stop with the charades. We both know that a wager cannot be annulled by a single party, all parties involved need to agree on that. You might have agreed to annul the wager but I have not." "Now why would you do that?" ...

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1998 Rose And Thorn

[1,042 words]

Chapter 1998 Rose And Thorn

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 13:56

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

The Field Marshal was right any agreement cannot be just annulled by one of the involved parties but needs to be agreed upon by all the involved parties. Even if it's a creditor forgiving a debt the debtor has the right not to agree to it and pay his debt with the agreed-upon interest rate. People overlook this because they all assume the debtor would be relieved to have his debt forgiven. Wyatt was fully aware of this when he annulled the wager. Was he betting that the Field Marshal would not agree to it? What do you think? Yes, he was and Field Marshal was fully aware of it. Still, she walked into his trap just like had she willingly sat and watched as Henricks stole the D-rank silver beach dungeon relocation card. Had Wyatt annulled the wager saying no hard feelings I was just joking or something of that sort, the Field Marshal would not have had trouble agreeing to annul the wager between them. However, Wyatt said he would annul the wager thinking he bet on the wrong person. Wyatt stated he judged her incorrectly. He meant he was wrong to think the Field Marshal was someone who would uphold her promise. He implied that she was someone who went back on her word. In summary, Wyatt said the Field Marshal had no honor. This did not sit right with Field Marshal even though Wyatt handed her the key to unlock her cage. Now all she had to do was use the key and walk out of the cage but she could not bring herself to do that. Her heart and mind did not allow her to leave the cage. Yes, Field Marshal had her shameless side but at the same time, there was another side to her that also valued honor over her family and the southern region itself. One such example was when she watched as the agents from the central government attacked her defenseless husband, bombarded her sister-in-law, and stole the one thing that would help prosper the southern region that she loved just because of her promise to Henricks. Wyatt who was the victim of the Field Marshal's shamelessness and honor knew exactly what he was doing when he went to the extreme and annulled the wager that would give him the Field Marshal's undying loyalty. He knew if he brought up the Field Marshal's honor doing it, she would not agree to the annulment. From his conversation with the Field Marshal, Wyatt had long judged the Field Marshal as a good person, and the good people were easy to manipulate as, despite their callus exterior, within their hearts, the good people were nothing but gullible fools who believed in the good defined by majority and let that definition limit their freedom. The Field Marshal was the same despite her shameless and despicable front in the rear she put her and her family's honor first because she believed in it. Who other than gullible fools would believe something that cannot be seen, touched, smelled, heard, or tasted? Despite being the top ten strongest in the world she left everything behind and came to a 3rd-rate city to protect a stranger who recently became famous, this alone was enough proof. "Why? You know fully well why. It would not be far-fetched of me to say that you were counting on it when you annulled the wager. What amazes me is that despite knowing what you are up to and despite

having the key to my freedom in my hand I find myself stubbornly tightening the slave collar around my neck," The Field Marshal informed helplessly. Then, shaking her head she gazed at Wyatt with helplessness in her eyes and dejected said, "My niece warned me to maintain as little contact with you as possible. But, I was a fool I was so mesmerized by the beauty of the rose that I forgot about the thorns. Now I have no choice but to bleed paying from my ignorance." "I have no idea what you are talking about. I had no other agenda in mind when I annulled the wager. I meant every word I said," Wyatt denied the Field Marshal's claims with an indifferent look. Diana and Cindy were shocked seeing the scene unfold before them. They knew their boss was dangerous, after all, he brought them to their knees. But they did not know he had done the same to the Southern Hero. Someone who was known to have single-handedly defeated 100 hostile demigods. Someone whose name was feared by beings revered as gods in the ancient period, the Supreme beings themselves. But all this was nothing compared to what happened next. "Wyatt, will you please stop with games. I am tired and sick of it. If you want me to apologize, I will do that. If you want me to grovel, I will do that. If you want me to beg, I will do that. Just don't force me to taint my honor, I would rather die than become the taint on the honor of the Heatsend bloodline coursing through me," the Field Marshal pleaded with Wyatt and then took a knee in front of him shocking even Aurelia.

Aurelia had heard many stories about the Field Marshal from her mother. In each of those stories, her mother would make a point of mentioning the Field Marshal's honorable conduct toward her subordinates, allies, and enemies, alike. And her despicable conduct in the battlefield. Aurelia's mother would use the Field Marshal as an example to teach her that even if she was honest she could also be equally despicable.

Aurelia did not believe that someone capable of stabbing an enemy from the behind on the battlefield without any hesitation would be willing to risk everything she held dear to uphold her and her family's honor. These two personalities were just too opposite. Regardless, seeing the hero from her mother's stories kneel in front of her Boss Aurelia had mixed feelings. She was both proud of her boss and felt pity for her childhood hero.

...

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1999 Not A Oath Or Swear But Trust

[1,080 words]

Chapter 1999 Not A Oath Or Swear But Trust

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 14:03

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

Going past the initial shock of the events, Diana and Cindy were too afraid to breathe as they witnessed the Southern Hero bend her knees in front of Southern Hope begging him not to force her to taint her family's honor. They felt like they should not be present for this conversation. However, now that they were caught in the middle of it, they were worried leaving might come off offensive. Therefore, they thought of minimizing their presence by seizing to breathe. Aurelia however intently shifted her gaze between her boss and the Field Marshal. As of right now, things appear to be at a tipping point, if her boss handled this correctly he might receive a strong and capable subordinate. However, if he were to play his hands wrong he would have one shell of a strong puppet. She had a feeling that her boss did not want the latter as he already held the strings to the Field Marshal but he had shown that he was willing to let them go since he expected the Field Marshal to be more than a puppet for him.

Wyatt looked at Field Marshal who had gotten on her knees despite him stopping her. He had tried enticing her with carrots and correcting her with the stick but both failed to get the Field Marshal to make Wyatt her priority over the Southern Region and the Royal family. So he used the tested method he knew for sure would get the Field Marshal to give up on the Southern Region and the Royal family, honor. After all, Henricks had long shown him and the world that for her honor the Field Marshal was willing to sit by and watch the Southern Region and the Royal family burn. The only problem was the Field Marshal had her twisted definition of honor, making it difficult for just anyone to use it against her. Wyatt was in awe of whoever groomed the Field Marshal into what she was today. "Field Marshal, I asked you if you could serve me with your heart and mind but you could not decide so I chose to free you from your oath. Also, I did not want to force you to choose between me and the Southern region & royal family. I understand where you are coming from, going back on your words will hurt your honor but not doing your duty properly will also hurt your honor. You cannot have it both ways. This is not meant to be, let us leave it at that," Wyatt spoke, making it clear to Field Marshal that he would be willing to take her back only if she was willing to serve him with her entirety and not just half-ass it by giving her loyalty to him while her heart & mind belonged to the Southern region & royal family. Saying his piece, Wyatt turned to leave. Listening to him the Field Marshal bit her lower lip seriously considering things and soon closing her eyes letting out a deep breath. Then opening her eyes revealing a firm resolve, she announced, "I am willing." Seeing Wyatt pause she continued, "I swear on my honor to serve you with my entirety." Wyatt turned to look at the Field Marshal and locked eyes with her resolute gaze, he knew that for her a swear on her honor meant more than an oath in the presence of the world's will. However, he still did not agree to accept her. Instead, he neared her and kneeled right in front of her. He daringly

took her arms in his and said, "I do not care about our oath in the presence of the world's will or the swear on your honor, With enough strength, one can break free of the constraints of the oath taken in the world's will. With time and under the right conditions even a diamond decays, let alone one's thoughts. Look into my eyes and answer me this do you trust me?" The Field Marshal did not react to Wyatt taking her hands, her gaze remained locked with his as she keenly heard his every word. Then, when it was her turn to answer, she nodded without any hesitation saying, "I do." And morphed into her true appearance. A young silver-haired girl, fourteen or fifteen years of age, with peerless beauty and gorgeous eyes with blue pupils that resembled the boundless morning sky filled with the countless stars that would only be visible in a night sky. This was the Field Marshal's true appearance that she hid not just from Wyatt but the rest of the world even her husband Lorenzo had not had the honor of witnessing it. After all, she was a few centuries old, in terms of mortal age her bones should be decaying and not retaining youth.

Fearing that seeing her true form people would assume she was vain and afraid of old age she assumed an image that would not embarrass her and allow her to exert her authority properly. That was also one of the reasons why the Field Marshal did not dare to show herself in front of Wyatt, worried his unique eyes would see her true form. Wyatt was not surprised by the Field Marshal's true appearance but impressed as it was common for demigods/devils to retain their youth after ascension to their realms and the younger one's physical body becomes the more potential and room for growth they held. Wyatt eyes gleamed thinking he had not judged the Field Marshal's potential wrong. Looking at the Field Marshal's true appearance, Diana and Cindy who only breathed to sustain themselves while trying to keep their presence minimum almost forgot to breathe and lost their consciousness looking at the Field Marshal's beauty it was truly breathtaking. Aurelia's reaction was totally different, her eyes widened in disbelief seeing that the hero of her childhood bedtime stories in her true form was the same age as her. Now she didn't just want to grow strong enough to defeat a devil in the card master realm but grow that strong in her current age. She would not let the peers of her age outdo her. If Wyatt knew her thoughts he would use his soul pupils on her brain to check how it functioned. ...

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,050 words]

Chapter 2000 Partner

Date- 18 April 2321

Time- 14:11

Location- Card World, Southern Region, Blossom District, Sky Blossom City

"I do trust you," The Field Marshal wasn't just saying this to get Wyatt to accept her but she meant it.

This day has been one hell of a roller coaster ride for her mentally and emotionally. One could not go as far as to say that she was able to look and think past her old wiring and programming because of it but immersed in Wyatt's eyes, she saw his sincerity. In the presence of his pure yet formidable sincerity, the Field Marshal was stripped of her teachings and experience, she was bare and naked allowing her to feel the truth with her skin without any prejudice and shaded glasses. She could feel Wyatt's sincerity was true and pure without any trick to it. She recalled Wyatt's promises to her one by one, her mind and heart did not ask if he was capable of fulfilling them but they knew that he was willing to do it for her. At that moment the Field Marshal had really come to trust Wyatt. All her doubts and hesitation had vanished. So when she answered that she trusted him, it wasn't just her but her entire being yelling its answer. Even if that moment lasted for a few seconds, the Field Marshal had come to learn something surprising about herself that she truly trusted Wyatt. Despite her reservations about him, she did trust him and everything he said. This was why despite her niece's caution and against her best judgment she fell for Wyatt's tricks time and again. Learning her true feelings and thoughts, the Field Marshal did not fight against them like she previously did. Instead, she respected and accepted them without trying to bargain or reason with herself. In acceptance, the Field Marshal found that she was complicating something simple, and repeated herself, "I trust you, Wyatt." Wyatt noticing the change in the Field Marshal nodded and said, "I trust you too. Welcome aboard partner." Then together with the Field Marshal, Wyatt rose to his feet with a warm smile. "Partner?" the Field Marshal uttered, only to hear Wyatt say, "Yes, we are partners. I get to call all the shots unilaterally, and you get to see them through no questions asked." "Where did you get your dictionary? Because mine calls that slavery," the Field Marshal said rolling her eyes at Wyatt's shamelessness. "Welcome back intern," Aurelia said slapping the back of the mid-teen Field Marshal causing her to frown as she controlled her boiling rage. Then, forcing a smile, that was the scariest smile Aurelia had seen in her lifetime, she added, "Intern? Did you not just hear your boss call me partner? How dare you to address a partner so casually? Are you tired of living grunt! Believe it or not, I will dock your entire year's pay."

Listening to the Field Marshal, Aurelia was taken aback, she turned to look at Wyatt for clarification only to see him nod his head agreeing with Field Marshal. Seeing her boss's response, three words crossed her mind, 'I am fucked.' Though feeling betrayed Aurelia did not give up, laying on the floor she grabbed Wyatt's legs and said, "Boss, you cannot throw me under the bus now that you got what you want." "Let go of my legs. And who is throwing you under the bus? Aren't I giving you what you wanted? How am I to be blamed for the consequences of your brazen actions?" Wyatt said washing his hands of the feud between Field Marshal and Aurelia. Yes, Aurelia did what she did to help him but he could not just ask the Field Marshal swallow her anger to forgive and forget. However, he did plan to compensate Aurelia in other ways. "Boss, how can you

be so heartless?" Aurelia looked at Wyatt from down below making abandoned puppy eyes. "Wyatt, your subordinates seem to lack some manners, do you want my help to teach her some basic manners and help her grow some spine while I am at it," the Field Marshal said grinning eerily at Aurelia. Letting go of Wyatt's legs Aurelia spun on the floor like a bottle and came to a swift halt catching the Field Marshal's legs and begged, "Your Highness, please forgive this lowly slave for forgetting her place. Please do not waste your breath, energy, or precious time on some as worthless like me. I have long heard that your generosity knows no bounds, please spare some of it on this nobody." "What has your mother been teaching you for you to grow as such?" the Field Marshal was stumped by Aurelia's shamelessness. Just when she would think that Aurelia could not stoop any lower she manages to prove her wrong every time. While Aurelia and Field Marshal went to and fro, Wyatt was busy gauging the Field Marshal physical body impressed by it. It wasn't surprising for the demigods and devils to rejuvenate and regain their youth when they ascended to the devil or demigod rank and to age slower than their race limit. The reason Wyatt was impressed by her physical body having the appearance of a mid-teen girl was that the Field Marshal was a few centuries old for her to retain such youth after ascension to the demigod realm showed she had a lot of room to grow. One could even say that, in terms of divinity, she was just a growing child with boundless potential. Not all those who ascend to the demigod realm were blessed with such a bountiful rejuvenation and slow aging. Some don't even get the blessing of rejuvenation when they ascend to the demigod realm. This could only mean that their divinity did not have much room to grow. Now such demigods were doomed to make very little to no progress in their cultivation in their entire lifetime.

Wyatt had long suspected that if not for the Card World's limitation and limited knowledge limiting her the Field Marshal would have already rivaled the Ruler Class beings. Now seeing her true appearance and based on what he had learned about ascension to the devil/demigod realm he had confirmed that his suspicions were right. ..

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.